# ccreative <br> <br> commons 

 <br> <br> commons}
$\begin{array}{lllllllllll}\text { C } & \mathrm{O} & \mathrm{M} & \mathrm{M} & \mathrm{O} & \mathrm{N} & \mathrm{S} & \mathrm{D} & \mathrm{E} & \mathrm{E} & \mathrm{D}\end{array}$

저작자표시-비영리-변경금지 2.0 대한민국
이용자는 아래의 조건을 따르는 경우에 한하여 자유롭게

- 이 저작물을 복제, 배포, 전송, 전시, 공연 및 방송할 수 있습니다.

다음과 같은 조건을 따라야 합니다:


저작자표시. 귀하는 원저작자를 표시하여야 합니다.

비영리. 귀하는 이 저작물을 영리 목적으로 이용할 수 없습니다.

- 귀하는, 이 저작물의 재이용이나 배포의 경우, 이 저작물에 적용된 이용허락조건 을 명확하게 나타내어야 합니다.
- 저작권자로부터 별도의 허가를 받으면 이러한 조건들은 적용되지 않습니다.

저작권법에 따른 이용자의 권리는 위의 내용에 의하여 영향을 받지 않습니다.

이것은 이용허락규약(Legal Code)을 이해하기 숩게 요약한 것입니다.

$$
\text { Disclaimer } \square
$$

## c)Collection

## 이 학 박 사 학 위 논 문

# Dimension Reduction Methods for Multi-source and Manifold-valued Data 

## 2023년 2월

최 서 원

Dimension Reduction Methods for Multi-source and Manifold-valued Data

지도교수 정 성 규<br>이 논문을 이학박사 학위논문으로 제출함 2022년 12월

서울대학교 대학원
통계학과
최 서 원

## 최서원의 이학박사 학위논문을 인준함 2022년 12월

| 위 원 장 임 채 영 <br> (인)  <br> 부위원장 정 성 규 | (인) |  |  |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| 위 | 원 | 오 희 석 | (인) |
| 위 | 원 | 김 용 대 | (인) |
| 위 | 원 | 김 병 원 | (인) |

# Dimension Reduction Methods for Multi-source and Manifold-valued Data 

By<br>SeoWon Choi

A Thesis<br>Submitted in fulfillment of the requirement for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in Statistics

Department of Statistics
College of Natural Sciences
Seoul National University
February, 2023

NHAX SEOUL NATONAL LINVERSTY

# ABSTRACT <br> Dimension Reduction Methods for Multi-source and Manifold-valued Data 

SeoWon Choi<br>The Department of Statistics<br>The Graduate School<br>Seoul National University

In this thesis, we discuss dimension reduction methods in nonEuclidean space. Due to non-zero curvature, we cannot make use of the traditional techniques like Pythagorean theorem in building a statistical method in non-Euclidean space. To capture the structure of data set, it is necessary to understand the geometric nature of a given non-Euclidean space. We propose the following two dimension reduction methods, generalizing popular multivariate data analysis methods, factor analysis and PCA, to non-Euclidean settings.

In Chapter 2, we propose Principal Structure Identification (PSI) for multi-source dataset.

Analysis of multi-source dataset, where data on the same objects are collected from multiple sources, is of rising importance in many fields, most notably in multi-omics biology. We propose a novel framework and algorithms for integrative decomposition of such multi-source data, to identify and sort out common factor scores in terms of whether the scores are relevant to all data sources (fully joint), to some data sources (partially joint), or to a single data source.

The key difference between our proposal and existing approaches is that we utilize raw source-wise factor score subspaces in the identification of the partially-joint block-wise association structure. To identify common score subspaces, which may be partially joint to some of data sources, from noisy observations, our proposed algorithm sequentially computes one-dimensional flag means among source-wise score subspaces, then collects the subspaces that are close to the mean.

In Chapter 3, we propose Penalized Principal Nested Spheres (PenPNS) for dataset on the hypersphere surface.

Analysis of Principal Nested Spheres (PNS) (Jung, 2012) is a flexible dimension reduction method for dataset on the hypersphere, e.g. directional data (Fisher,1993; Fisher et al.,1993; Mardia and Jupp,2000) and shape data (Kendall,1984; Dryden and Mardia, 1998). In PNS, the dimension reduction is an iterative procedure for discarding unimportant dimensions. It is specifically designed to capture a certain type of non-geodesic variation by fitting a small sphere.

However, PNS suffers from overfitting, a phenomenon where
data points are fitted with a small sphere even though they are generated from along a great sphere. We consider two types of overfitting phenomena. (1) When the estimated radius $\widehat{r}$ is over $\pi / 2$, the estimated axis $\widehat{v}$ is flipped to $-\widehat{v}$ and we take the radius as $\pi-\widehat{r}$, since the radius as parameter ranges from 0 to $\pi / 2$. Then the distribution of the estimated radius becomes a folded version of the distribution between the true axis and the data points. Thus the expectation of the estimated radius is less than $\pi / 2$. (2) When data points are generated along a great sphere but within a short interval, the data point cloud has a disc shape and is usually fitted by a small sphere with a very small radius.

PenPNS is an improvement of PNS that overcomes the overfitting phenomena in small sphere fitting. To deal with the first type of overfitting phenomenon, PenPNS regularize radius in estimation, where the value of the penalty term grows larger as radius decreases departing from $\pi / 2$. For the second type, PenPNS gives a penalizing term on the cross-validation error in choosing tuning parmeter. The penalizing term, called Index of Dispersion, has a larger value in the case a disc-shaped distribution is fitted with a small radius. In Simulation Study and Real Data analysis, we demonstrate that PenPNS successfully mitigates the overfitting phenomena.

Keywords: Dimension reduction, Non-Euclidean space, Multisource dataset, Dataset on the hypersphere, Multi-omics dataset. Student Number: 2017-38449

## Contents

Abstract ..... i
1 Introduction ..... 1
1.1 Mathematical Backgrounds for Multi-source Dataset ..... 3
1.2 Mathematical Backgrounds for Dataset on Hyper-sphere5
2 Partially-joint Structure Identification ..... 9
2.1 Introduction ..... 9
2.2 Statistical Framework ..... 14
2.2.1 Partially-joint structures ..... 14
2.2.2 Partially-joint score subspace and index-setordering16
2.2.3 Partially-joint score and loading ..... 19
2.3 Estimation ..... 20
2.3.1 Partially-joint Score Subspace Estimation ..... 21
2.3.2 Partially-joint Loading Matrix Estimation ..... 25
2.3.3 Tuning Parameter Selection ..... 27
2.4 Theory ..... 29
2.5 Simulation Study ..... 32
2.5.1 Example Dataset Generation ..... 32
2.5.2 Results on Comparative Study ..... 33
2.5.3 Results on Imbalanced Signal Strength be-tween Joint and Individual Components37
2.6 Real Data Analysis ..... 38
3 Penalized Principal Nested Spheres ..... 47
3.1 Introduction ..... 47
3.2 Statistical Framework ..... 53
3.2.1 Nested Subsphere Structure ..... 53
3.2.2 Estimation of Subspheres ..... 55
3.3 Computational Algorithms ..... 57
3.3.1 Update of $v$ ..... 57
3.3.2 Update of $r$ ..... 58
3.3.3 Tuning Parameter Selection ..... 58
3.4 Theory ..... 59
3.4.1 Geometry of Parameter Space ..... 59
3.4.2 Strong Consistency ..... 60
$3.5 \quad$ IoD Criterion to Avoid Overfitting ..... 64
3.5.1 Index of Dispersion (IoD) and IoD Criterion ..... 65
3.5.2 Choice of the Constant $C$ d ..... 67
3.5.3 Geometric Interpretation of Model Bias ..... 74
3.6 Simulation Study ..... 76
3.6.1 Example Dataset Generation ..... 76
3.6.2 Results ..... 78
3.7 Real Data Analysis ..... 83
A Supplementary Materials for Chapter 2 ..... 91
A. 1 Mathematical Backgrounds of Section 2.3.1 ..... 91
A.1.1 Principal Angles ..... 91
A.1.2 Calculation of Mean Direction ..... 93
A. 2 Proofs ..... 96
A.2.1 Some Basic Facts for Proofs ..... 96
A.2.2 Proof of Theorem 2.1 ..... 98
A.2.3 Proof of Theorem 2.2 ..... 104
A.2.4 Proof of Corollary 2.1 ..... 105
A.2.5 Examples ..... 105
A. 3 Additional Information on Simulation Study ..... 109
A.3.1 Examples of the Measure of Dissimilaritybetween Two Partially-Joint Structures . . 109
A.3.2 Review on Methodology of Other Methods ..... 110
A.3.3 Results on Tuning Parameter Selection ..... 115

| A.3.4 Simulation Settings for Section 2.5 .3 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | ..... 118

A. 4 Additional Information on Real Data Analysis ..... 119
B Supplementary Materials for Chapter 3 ..... 121
B. 1 Proofs ..... 121
B.1.1 Proof of Lemma|3.1 ..... 121
B.1.2 Proof of Proposition 3.1 ..... 122
B.1.3 Proof of Theorem 3.1 ..... 123
B.1.4 Proof of Theorem 3.2 ..... 126
B.1.5 Proof of Theorem 3.3 ..... 128
B.1.6 Proof of Proposition 3.2 ..... 131
B. 2 Additional Information on Simulation Study ..... 136
B. 3 Additional Information on Real Data Analysis ..... 138

Abstract (in Korean) 152

## List of Tables

2.1 Comparative Study on Model 1 to 3. The unit for$\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ is percent. Numbers in parantheses arestandard deviations.35
2.2 Comparative Study on Model 4 to 6. ..... 36
2.3 The case where the joint component has larger vari- ..... $\square$
ations than the individual components. ..... 38
2.4 The case where the individual components have largervariations than the joint components.38
3.1 Results of radius estimation when $d=2$ and $r=90^{\circ}$. ..... 82
A.4.1Fisher's exact tests between gene mutations/chromosome
defects and the CLL subgroups, $\alpha$ and $\beta$ with top5 adjested p-values (Benjamini-Hochberg method). 119
A.4.2The association between IGHV mutation status and $\qquad$ the CLL subgroups with adjusted p-value (9 missing values excluded). . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 119
A.4.3The most appeared drugs in the subgroups [a] and [b] with appearances at least four times out of 5 concentrations.120
B.2.1Results of radius estimation when $d=2$ and $r=45^{\circ} .137$
B.2.2Results on mitigating type 2 overfitting phenomenon. 137
B.3.1Results of the Original PNS on Cephalometric X-
ray Image Data. $S S R$ stands for 'sum of squared
residuals'. Size is a size (radius) of $\mathfrak{A}_{m}$ in $\mathbb{R}^{d+1}$. . . 140
B.3.2Results of PenPNS (MCP) on Cephalometric X-ray

Image Data . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 141
B.3.3Results of PNGS on Cephalometric X-ray Image Data142
B.3.4Results of PenPNS (MCP) + IoD Criterion on Cephalo-
metric X-ray Image Data 143

## List of Figures

2.1 An example of index-set ordering is depicted as the indexed partially-ordered set. Arrow $\rightarrow$ stands for $\subset$, e.g. $\{1\} \rightarrow\{1,2\}$ means $\{1\} \subset\{1,2\}$. . . . . . . 18
2.2 A figurative description for computing partially-joint
$\square$ score subspace $\left[\widehat{W}_{i}\right]$, for $S_{i}=\{1,2\}$. The two-dimensional subspace $\left[\hat{V}_{2}\right.$ ] is depicted as a disk. $w_{\{1,2\}}$ is the mean direction and $p_{2}$ stands for the projection of $w_{\{1,2\}}$ onto $\left[\widehat{V}_{2}\right]$.
2.3 The reconstructed components according to the estimated partially-joint structure. The values are all normalized for each column, then truncated to line on $[-2,2]$.42

| 2.4 (a) The matrix $Z_{\text {Drug, } S_{2}}:=\widehat{U}_{\text {(Drug), } 2} \widehat{W}_{2}^{T}$. (b) The |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| whole $X_{\text {Drug }}$ data matrix. (c) The density plot of |  |  |
| the subgroups $\alpha$ and $\beta$ along the first principal com- |  |  |
| ponent (PC) score of $Z_{\text {Drus, } S_{2}}$; (d) The PC scores |  |  |
| plot for the whole $X_{\text {Drug }}$; (e) The density plot of the |  |  |
| subgroups $\alpha$ and $\beta$ along the first principal compo- |  |  |
| nent of $Z_{\text {Meth, } S_{2}}$; (f) The PC scores plot of the whole |  |  |
| $X_{\text {Meth }}$. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 45 |  |  |
| 2.5 The difference in overall survival between the sub- |  |  |
| groups $\alpha$ and $\beta$ is displayed on a Kaplan plot with |  |  |
| p -value 0.0028 from the log-rank test........ .446 |  |  |
| 3.1 (a) Data points generated along a small sphere with |  |  |
| $r=\pi / 4$. (b) Data points generated along a great |  |  |
| sphere (the equator), but inside a short interval |  |  |
| of $10^{\circ}$ (perturbed by von Mises-Fisher distribution |  |  |
| with $\kappa=50$ ). Blue circle is the fitted small sphere |  |  |
| by PNS. |  |  |
| 3.2 A small sphere estimator and a great sphere es- |  |  |
| timator on a disc-shaped distribution (left) and a |  |  |
| doughnut-shaped distribution (right). |  |  |
| 3.3 A bird's eye view from the direction of $v$. Each data |  |  |
| point $x_{i}$ is generated from a rotationally invariant |  |  |
| distribution (circle) with a mean direction $\mu=x_{0 i} . \quad 75$ |  |  |
| 3.4 The biases calculated from (3.8) are drawn in solid |  |  |
| lines. The biases from Monte Carlo simulations are |  |  |
| in dashed lines. The confidence intervals for Monte |  |  |
| Carlo simulations are in gray-shaded areas. . . . . 77 |  |  |


| 3.5 Examples of generic data generation $(n=100)$ (a) |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $r=45^{\circ}, \kappa=100, t_{1}=30^{\circ}$, (b) $r=90^{\circ}, \kappa=100$, |  |  |
|  |  |  |
| 3.6 Results of radius estimation when $d=2, r=90^{\circ}$ |  |  |
| and $n=100$. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 80 |  |  |
| 3.7 Results of axis estimation when $d=2, r=90^{\circ}$ and |  |  |
| $n=100$. The estimated axis $\widehat{v}$ are mapped to the |  |  |
| tangent plane at $(0,0,1)^{T}$ by the exponential map |  |  |
| $\operatorname{Exp}_{(0,0,1)^{T}}$. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 81 |  |  |
|  | Results of radius estimation when $d=2, r=45^{\circ}$. | 81 |
| 3.9 | Results on mitigating type 2 overfitting phenomenon. | 86 |
| 3.10 Cephalometric X-ray Image Data : Estimated radii |  |  |
| $\widehat{r}_{m}$ of small sphere estimators $A_{m}\left(\widehat{v}_{k}, \widehat{r}_{m}\right)$ for PNS, |  |  |
| PenPNS (MCP), PNGS and PenPNS (MCP) + IoD |  |  |
| Criterion. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 87 |  |  |
| 3.11 Cephalometric X-ray Image Data : The principal |  |  |
| mode of variation by $\mathfrak{A}_{1}$ (left column) and $\mathfrak{A}_{2}$ (right |  |  |
| column). (a)(b) PNS, (c)(d) PenPNS (MCP). . . . 88 |  |  |
| 3.12 Cephalometric X-ray Image Data : The principal |  |  |
| mode of variation by $\mathfrak{A}_{1}$ (left column) and $\mathfrak{A}_{2}$ (right |  |  |
| column). (a)(b) PNGS, (c)(d) PenPNS (MCP) + |  |  |
|  |  |  |

A.3.1The values of empirical risk (solid) and diff $\left.\left(\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{0} ; \widehat{Z}_{t r}\right), \widehat{S}^{( }\right)(\lambda ; \widehat{Z})\right)$

A.3.2The values of penalized empirical risk for $\lambda$ when
$n=200$ and $\operatorname{SNR}=2$. The values of empirical risk (solid line) and the measure of dissimilarity, $\operatorname{diff}\left(\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}(\lambda, \widehat{Z}), \mathfrak{S}_{0}\right),($ dashed line $)$ over varying $\lambda$ are
shown. 117
B.2.1Results of radius estimation when $d=2, r=90^{\circ}$
and $n=1000$. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 136
B.3.1Cephalometric X-ray Image Data: Data points in
the coordinates by PNS (top) and PenPNS (MCP)
(bottom). The number means the percent variance
explained. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 138
B.3.2Cephalometric X-ray Image Data : Data points in
the coordinates by PNGS (top) and PenPNS (MCP)

+ IoD Criterion (bottom). The number means the
percent variance explained. . . . . . . . . . . . . . 139


## Chapter 1

## Introduction

Recent days, statistical methods for dataset in non-Euclidean space have gained much attention, in need of analyzing unconventional datasets, such as directional data (Fisher,1993; Fisher et al.,1993; Mardia and Jupp,2000) and shape data (Kendall,1984; Dryden and Mardia,1998), or exploring the geometric interpretations of existing methods, such as PCA (Hotelling,1993). However, due to non-zero curvature, applying even elementary statistical methods to non-Euclidean space is a challenging task. The difficulties come from two ways: (1) identify the mathematical entity of the dataset, (2) design an estimate that explains the data set well, but also reflects well the geometric nature of the space where the data points dwell in.

For example, defining even a basic statistical concept in nonEuclidean space can be puzzling, e.g. defining "mean" on the sphere surface, $S^{2}$. We may raise the following questions: Is there any concrete way of defining "mean" on the sphere, such as "summing up data points" on the sphere surface or "divide the sum by
the number of points"? What would be the "geometrical entity" of that mean? Does it even reside on the same original sphere surface as data points? In building up an optimization problem to find mean, how can we measure a distance between two points on $S^{2} ?$

In this thesis, we consider two types of dataset.

1. Multi-source dataset (see Chapter 2)
2. Dataset on the hypersphere surface (see Chapter 3).

Before jumping into methodologies, we need to provide mathematical frameworks for these unconventional types of dataset. In the next sections in this chapter, we give mathematical preliminaries for the thesis.

We want to clarify the relation between our dataset and nonEuclidean geometry. The non-Euclidean spaces upon which our data sets reside are described as manifolds. Specifically, we explain (1) Grassmann manifold for multi-source dataset and (2) the hypersphere $S^{d}$ for dataset on the hypersphere surface.

We also provide related geometrical concepts therein, e.g. (1) a concept of "distance" between two points on each manifold or (2) an analogue of "mean" for data points in non-Euclidean space. We utilize geometrical concepts in building statistical methods later.

We then present the proposed statistical methods to analyze our datasets in the next chapters:

1. Partially-joint Structure Indentification (PNS) for multi-source dataset (see Chapter 2)
2. Penalized Principal Nested Sphere (PenPNS) for dataset on the hypersphere surface (see Chapter 3).

A detailed introduction to each method is deferred to the chapter of its own, see Section 2.1 and Section 3.1 respectively.

### 1.1 Mathematical Backgrounds for Multisource Dataset

By the multi-source data, we mean data obtained for multiple groups of variables on the same set of subjects. In other words, there are $K$ data blocks, $X_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p_{k} \times n}$, for $k=1, \ldots, K$, observed for matched $n$ subjects. Assuming zero mean, each data block is decomposed into

$$
\begin{equation*}
X_{k}=Z_{k}+E_{k}=U_{k} V_{k}^{T}+E_{k}, \quad k=1, \ldots, K \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which the low-rank "signal" matrix $Z_{k}$ (say, of rank $r_{k}$ ) is factored into a loading matrix $U_{k}$ and a score matrix $V_{k}$. The score matrix $V_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times r_{k}}$ is an orthonormal matrix and can be viewed as a representation of a $r_{k}$-dimensional linear subspace in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$. We denote the score subspace spanned by the columns of $V_{k}$ as $\left[V_{k}\right]$ and say that $V_{k}$ represents the subspace $\left[V_{k}\right]$.

In the language of matrix manifolds, each score subspace $\left[V_{k}\right]$ is described as an element of the Grassmann manifold. Formally, the $p$-dimensional Grassmann manifold in $\mathbb{R}^{n}, \operatorname{Gr}(n, p)$, is defined as the set of all $p$-dimensional linear subspaces of the $n$-dimensional vector space $\mathbb{R}^{n}$.

The problem here is that score subspace $\left[V_{k}\right]$ have different dimensions each other. In this section, we want to define a notion of
distance among linear subspaces of different dimensions (for short, subspace distance). In other words, it is a distance $d(A, B)$ with $A \in \operatorname{Gr}\left(n, p_{1}\right)$ and $B \in \operatorname{Gr}\left(n, p_{2}\right)$ which allows $p_{1} \neq p_{2}$. We here adopt the framework of Ye and Lim (2016). In fact, the framework is a generalization of distance among linear subspaces of the same dimension to the one of different dimensions.

## The Framework of Ye and Lim (2016)

Let $p_{1} \leq p_{2}$. Suppose we have a distance $d^{\prime}$ on $\operatorname{Gr}\left(n, p_{2}\right)$, that is, among linear subspaces of the same dimension $p_{2}$. A distance $d$ between $[A] \in \operatorname{Gr}\left(n, p_{1}\right)$ and $[B] \in \operatorname{Gr}\left(n, p_{2}\right)$ is derived as

$$
d([A],[B])=\min \left\{d^{\prime}([X],[B]):[X] \in \Omega([A])\right\},
$$

where $\Omega([A])=\left\{[X] \in \operatorname{Gr}\left(n, p_{2}\right):[A] \subset[X]\right\}$. For more details, see Theorem 7 and 12 in Ye and Lim (2016).

In Chapter 2, we use the Frobenius norm distance which is defined as

$$
d([A],[B])=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\left\|A A^{T}-B B^{T}\right\|_{F}
$$

where $\|\cdot\|_{F}^{2}$ is the Frobenius norm and $A$ and $B$ are orthonormal matrices which represent $[A] \in \operatorname{Gr}\left(n, p_{1}\right)$ and $[B] \in \operatorname{Gr}\left(n, p_{2}\right)$. (To put it precisely, we generalize the Frobenius norm distance among linear subspaces of the same dimension to of different dimensions using Ye and Lim framework.)

Using the concept of subspace distance, we can define an analogue of "mean" for a set of linear subspaces. One of the examples
is the one-dimensional mean among linear subspaces of different dimensions (for short, mean direction).

Suppose linear subspaces $\left[V_{k}\right]$ of dimension $r_{k}$ in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ for $k=$ $1, \ldots, K$ are given. The mean direction $\hat{w}$ minimizes the sum of the squares of subspace distances $d$ between a candidate $w$ and subspaces $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$ for $k \in S_{i}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{w}=\underset{w^{T} w=1}{\arg \min } \sum_{k \in S_{i}} d\left([w],\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]\right)^{2} \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

When we use the Frobenius norm distance for $d$, the mean direction $\hat{w}$ can be computed easily using the truncated SVD, see Section A.1.2 in the supplementary materials.

The concept of subspace distance among linear subspaces of different dimensions will play a crucial role in Section 2.3.1. The concept of mean direction, or one-dimensional average among linear subspaces of different dimensions will be used in Section 2.3.1, notably (2.4).

### 1.2 Mathematical Backgrounds for Dataset on Hypersphere

Our aim is to regard the hypersphere as a Riemannian manifold. We begin by presenting a list of terminology.

A manifold of dimension $d$ is a Hausdoff space with a countable basis. Each point $p$ of a $d$-dimensional manifold $M$ has a neighborhood that is homeomorphic to an open subset of real space $\mathbb{R}^{d}$. Thus one can attach to every point $p$ a real vector space and we call this real vector space a tangent space, $T_{p} M$.

The set of all local homeomorphisms $(U, \phi)$ is called atlas, such that $U \subset M$ is open and $\phi: U \rightarrow \phi(U) \subset \mathbb{R}^{d}$. If a manifold $M$ is equipped with a differentiable atlas, $M$ is called a smooth manifold. If a smooth manifold $M$ is equipped with smoothly varying inner product $\langle,\rangle_{p}$ on tangent bundle $T M=\cup_{p \in M} T_{p} M, M$ is called a Riemannian manifold.

To define a distance on a Riemannian manifold, we need to define a length of a curve. Let a smooth map $\gamma:[a, b] \subset \mathbb{R} \rightarrow M$ be a curve in $M$. Indeed, for any $t \in[a, b], \dot{\gamma}(t)=\mathrm{d} \gamma(\mathrm{d} / \mathrm{d} t)$ is a tangent vector in $T_{\gamma(t)} M$. For a curve $\gamma$ such that $\dot{\gamma}(t) \neq 0$ for all $t \in[a, b]$, the length of $\gamma$ is defined as

$$
\ell_{[a, b]}(\gamma)=\int_{a}^{b} \sqrt{\langle\dot{\gamma}(t), \dot{\gamma}(t)\rangle_{\gamma(t)}} \mathrm{d} t
$$

Then, the geodesic distance between two points $p, q \in M$ is defined as the shortest length of all curves joining $p$ and $q$. The shortest curve joining two points on $M$ is called a geodesic.

For each $p \in M$, a geodesic at $p$ with direction $v \in T_{p} M$ is a curve $\gamma:[0,1] \rightarrow M$ such that $\gamma(0)=p, \dot{\gamma}(0)=v$ and $\|\dot{\gamma}(t)\|=\|v\|$ for $t \in[0,1]$. Such a geodesic exists uniquely by the Picard's existence theorem. Then the exponential map at $p$ is defined as a differentiable map $\operatorname{Exp}_{p}: U \subset T_{p} M \rightarrow M$ such that $\operatorname{Exp}_{p}=\gamma(1) \in M$.

For more mathematical details about Riemannian manifold, see Boothby (1986) and Lee (2006).

Now we can check that the hypersphere $S^{d}$, defined as

$$
S^{d}=\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{d+1}: x^{T} x=1\right\}
$$

has the following facts as a Riemannian manifold:

- The geodesic distance between two points $p, q \in S^{d}$ is defined as the angle between $p$ and $q$ at the center of $S^{d}$.
- We can explicit exponential maps of $S^{d}$ using the coordinates of $\mathbb{R}^{d+1}$.

Without loss of generality, let $p=(0, \ldots, 0,1) \in S^{d}$ be the north pole of $S^{d}$. The exponential map at $p$ is expressed as

$$
\operatorname{Exp}_{p}(v)=\left(v_{1} \frac{\sin \|v\|}{\|v\|}, \ldots, v_{d} \frac{\sin \|v\|}{\|v\|}, \cos \|v\|\right)
$$

with $v=\left(v_{1}, \ldots, v_{d}\right) \in T_{p} S^{d}$. The inverse exponential map at $p$ is expressed as

$$
\operatorname{Exp}_{p}^{-1}(w)=\left(w_{1} \frac{\theta}{\sin \theta}, \ldots, w_{d} \frac{\theta}{\sin \theta}\right)
$$

where $w=\left(w_{1}, \ldots, w_{d+1}\right) \in \mathbb{R}^{d+1} \backslash(0, \ldots, 0,-1)$ with $w^{T} w=$ 1 and $\theta=\arccos \left(w_{d+1}\right)$.

By exploiting the concepts of geodesic and geodesic distance, we can define an analogue of "mean" for dataset on the hypersphere $S^{d}$. One of the examples is Fréchet mean (Fréchet,1948; Bhattacharya and Patrangenaru,2003).

We first consider $X$ to be a $S^{d}$-valued random variable, which is a measurable mapping from a probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, \mathcal{P})$ into $\left(S^{d}, \mathcal{G}\right)$, where $\mathcal{G}$ denotes the Borel $\sigma$-algebra of $S^{m}$. Let $X_{1}, \ldots, X_{n}$ be random variables generated identically and independently from the same law as $X$.

Fréchet mean minimizes the least expected squared geodesic distance between a candidate Fréchet mean and data point. Specifically, the population and sample Fréchet mean set is defined as

$$
F=\left\{p \in S^{d}: \mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, p)=\inf _{q \in S^{d}} \mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, q)\right\}
$$

and

$$
F_{n}=\left\{p \in S^{d}: \mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, p)=\inf _{q \in S^{d}} \mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, q)\right\}
$$

Here the Fréchet mean sets $F$ and $F_{n}$ are guaranteed to be the set of points that reside on $S^{d}$. Compare them with a naive definition of mean on $S^{d}$ : vector-sum all data points on $S^{d}$ and scalar-divide with the number of data points, $n$ - the result does not even locate on the hypersphere surface, $S^{d}$. We see that building a statistical descriptor using a geometrical information (such as geodesic distance) instrinsic to manifold can enhance the interpretablity of data set.

The notion of geodesic distance on $S^{d}$ will play a key role in Chapter 3. Fréchet mean will be generalized to sphere descriptor of data points (called small/great sphere estimator in there), see Section 3.2 and 3.4 .

## Chapter 2

## Partially-joint Structure Identification

### 2.1 Introduction

In various fields of science and technology, there is a growing interest in analyzing multi-source data in an integrative way. By the multi-source data, we mean data obtained for multiple groups of variables on the same set of subjects. Each group of variables is observed from a common source, and form a data block. A prominent example of multi-source data is modern multi-omics data that include gene expressions, RNA sequencing, mutations, epigenetic markers or metagenomic materials (Subramanian et al.,2020). The recent development of high-throughput technologies enables us to extract these sources of information comprehensively from a given preparation of cancer/normal tissue samples (Reuter et al.,2015; Norris et al.,2017).

One of the main challenges in analyzing multi-omics data is that data blocks come from distinct measurements of different sources. For example, our motivating data set consists of three data blocks, each from a drug response panel, genome-wide DNA methylation profiles and RNA sequencing profiles (Dietrich et al.,2018); see Section 2.6 for a detailed description of the data.

Separately analyzing each data block hinders the assessment of inter-relations among different data blocks. To capture the potentially joint association structures in these multi block data, the linked component model has been oftentimes used (Smilde et al.,2003; VanDeun et al.,2009; Lock et al.,2013).

Suppose that there are $K$ data blocks, $X_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p_{k} \times n}$, for $k=$ $1, \ldots, K$, observed for $n$ subjects. The subjects in the data are common and matched, i.e., the measurements for the $i$ th subject appear in the $i$ th column of each data matrix. Assuming zero mean, each data block is decomposed into

$$
\begin{equation*}
X_{k}=Z_{k}+E_{k}=U_{k} V_{k}^{T}+E_{k}, \quad k=1, \ldots, K \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the low-rank "signal" matrix $Z_{k}$ is factored into a loading matrix $U_{k}$ and a score matrix $V_{k}$, which is perturbed by "noise" matrix $E_{k}$. The linked component model further assumes that two or more data blocks can potentially share a common score component VanDeun et al. (2009). An extreme example is that all scores are common to all data blocks, that is, $V_{1}=\cdots=V_{k}$, as in Smilde et al. (2003). The models considered in Lock et al. (2013) and Feng et al. (2018) allow some scores to be common to all data blocks, explaining the joint variation among all data blocks, and some scores to be specific to each data blocks (explaining the individual
variations in a single data block).
Following Gaynanova and Li (2019) and Gao et al. (2020), we in addition allow partially-joint scores that are shared across multiple, but not necessarily all, data blocks. An illustrative example of such a model, for $K=3$ blocks of data, is $\left(X_{1}^{T}, X_{2}^{T}, X_{3}^{T}\right)^{T}=$ $U W^{T}+E$,

$$
U W^{T}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
U_{(1), 1} & U_{(1), 2} & 0  \tag{2.2}\\
U_{(2), 1} & U_{(2), 2} & 0 \\
U_{(3), 1} & 0 & U_{(3), 3}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{lll}
W_{\{1,2,3\}} & W_{\{1,2\}} & W_{\{3\}}
\end{array}\right)^{T}
$$

where $U$ is the loading matrix, $W_{\{1,2,3\}}$ is a matrix of scores that affect all data blocks, and $W_{\{1,2\}}$ is a partially-joint score matrix, affecting only the first two data blocks, but not the third. The scores in $W_{\{3\}}$ are specific to the third data block. Our goal is to delineate such an association structure from a multi-source data.

In this chapter, we develop a novel framework and estimation strategy for integrative decomposition of multi-source data, by identifying scores that are fully joint to all data sources, partially joint to some, or specific to a single data source. The framework utilizes the signal score subspace $\left[V_{k}\right]$, a rank $r_{k}$ subspace of $\mathbb{R}^{n}$, spanned by the rows of the signal matrix $Z_{k}$ in (2.1). The rationale for using $\left[V_{k}\right]$ is straightforward: If a common score of rank $r$ is shared by the first two data blocks, then the intersection of $\left[V_{1}\right]$ and $\left[V_{2}\right]$ is non-empty, and is a dimension $r$ subspace. To capture the partially-joint block-wise association structure from the score
subspaces $\left[V_{k}\right]$, we define the collection of tuples

$$
\mathfrak{S}:=\mathfrak{S}\left(\left\{\left[V_{k}\right]\right\}_{k=1, \ldots, K}\right)=\{(S, r(S)): S \subset \mathcal{K}\}
$$

in which a non-empty subset $S$ of $\mathcal{K}=\{1, \ldots, K\}$ denotes a specific pattern of block-wise association, $W_{S}$ denotes the corresponding common scores (that are either fully-joint, partially-joint or specific to data sources) of rank $r(S)$. See Section 2.2 for a detailed construction of $\mathfrak{S}$, and Section 2.4 for conditions to guarantee the uniqueness of $\mathfrak{S}$.

To identify the partially-joint score structure $\mathfrak{S}$ from noisy observations, we propose to compute the flag mean of signal subspaces (Draper,2014), and to test whether the mean is indeed close to signal subspaces. If a mean $w$ is "close" to $\left[V_{1}\right]$ and $\left[V_{2}\right]$, but not to other subspaces, then it is a basis of (estimated) $W_{\{1,2\}}$. We use a tunable parameter to determine the closeness between two subspaces. The algorithm, detailed in Section 2.3, is quick in decomposing multi-source data sets, and boasts a superior performance in identifying $\mathfrak{S}$ and in the estimation of the subspaces spanned by the loading matrices and by the common score matrices.

Recently, there has been a growing interest in integrative decomposition of multi-source data (Lock et al.,2013; Li and Jung,2017; Feng et al.,2018; Li and Gaynanova,2018; Gaynanova and Li,2019; Gao et al.,2020). Among these, Gaynanova and Li (2019) and Gao et al. (2020) also considered modeling partially-joint association structures. However, these authors focused on the loading matrix $U$, and exploited the source-wise sparse structure of the matrix $U$, as seen in 2.2 . On the contrary, we explicitly utilize the signal
score matrices $V_{k}$ in (2.1) in identifying partially-joint scores of (2.2). The loading matrix is naturally obtained as a subsequent step in our proposal. Our approach extends the angle-based joint and individual variation identification of Feng et al. (2018), in which partially joint variations were not considered. In Section 2.5 , we numerically confirm that our proposal finds the true association structure much more accurately than the aforementioned decomposition methods.

The rest of chapter is organized as follows. In Section 2.2, we formally present our integrative decomposition framework and define the partially joint structure $\mathfrak{S}$, followed by the proposed decomposition algorithm and tuning parameter selection procedure in Section 2.3. In Section 2.4, conditions to guarantee unique decompositions are discussed. Section 2.5 is devoted to numerical illustrations and comparisons to existing methods. In Section 2.6 , we demonstrate the use of the proposed method in an analysis of a blood cancer multi-omics data set associated with drug responses, and reveal that the proposal detects a latent signal pattern, partially joint across two, but not all, data sources, which is not easily seen by a separate analysis of individual data blocks. Proofs, technical lemmas, examples and extended numerical results are given in the supplementary materials.

### 2.2 Statistical Framework

### 2.2.1 Partially-joint structures

Consider a set of row-centered data matrices $X_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p_{k} \times n}$ for $k=$ $1, \ldots, K$, where the $i$ th column of each data matrix corresponds to the same ( $i$ th) subject. Let $p=\sum_{k} p_{k}$. We assume that each $X_{k}$ is additively decomposed into the rank $r_{k}$ true signal block $Z_{k}$ and random errors $E_{k}$ so that $X_{k}=Z_{k}+E_{k}$.

We consider a model that the signal $Z=\left(Z_{1}^{T}, \ldots, Z_{K}^{T}\right)^{T}$ is decomposed

$$
Z=U W^{T},
$$

where each column of $W$ has Euclidean norm 1, but not necessarily orthonormal. We assume that the number of columns of $U$ and $W$ is less than $\min (n, p)$.

Our goal is to find an association structure among $Z_{k}$ 's, where multiple, but not necessarily all, of $Z_{k}$ 's share a joint signal component. We describe this manner using a word "partially-joint".

We give partially-jointness to the model by assuming blocksparsity on $U$. For example, when $K=3$, we can have a model

$$
\left(\begin{array}{c}
Z_{1} \\
Z_{2} \\
Z_{3}
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
U_{(1), 1} & U_{(1), 2} & 0 \\
U_{(2), 1} & U_{(2), 2} & 0 \\
U_{(3), 1} & 0 & U_{(3), 3}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{lll}
W_{1} & W_{2} & W_{3}
\end{array}\right)^{T},
$$

where the blocks $U_{(1), 3}, U_{(2), 3}$ and $U_{(3), 2}$ are exactly zero. In this case, $\left(U_{(1), 1}^{T} U_{(2), 1}^{T} U_{(3), 1}^{T}\right)^{T} W_{1}^{T}$ is a signal component shared by all $Z_{1}, Z_{2}$ and $Z_{3}$ whereas $\left(U_{(1), 2}^{T} U_{(2), 2}^{T}\right) W_{2}^{T}$ are shared "partially" by $Z_{1}$ and $Z_{2}$ and $U_{(3), 2} W_{3}^{T}$ is the one specific to $Z_{3}$.

We associate each block-sparse pattern with with an index-set, a subset of $\{1, \ldots, K\}$. For each index-set $S$, we say the rank of $S$, or $r(S)$, the number of the columns of $W$ associated with $S$. We summarize the block-sparsity as the partially-joint structure, the collection of pairs $(S, r(S))$. In our example, if $W_{1}$ and $W_{2}$ are composed of two and one columns, the partially-joint structure $\mathfrak{S}$ is given $((\{1,2,3\}, 2),(\{1,2\}, 1),(\{3\}, 1))$.

For each index-set $S$, the columns of $W$ associated with $S$ are concatenate into a $n \times r(S)$ matrix, called partially-joint score. The columns of $U$ associated with $S$ are also concatenated into a $p \times r(S)$ matrix, which can be split into block matrices of $p_{k} \times r(S)$ corresponding to $Z_{k}$ 's. We call these block matrices partially-joint loading. From the block-sparsity, block matrices that corresponds to $Z_{k}, k \notin S$ is zero. In our example, $W_{1}, W_{2}$ and $W_{3}$ are partiallyjoint scores and $U_{(1), 1}, U_{(2), 1}, U_{(3), 1}, U_{(2), 1}, U_{(2), 2}$ and $U_{(3), 3}$ are partially-joint loadings.

For given $Z_{i}$ 's, our aim is to find partially-joint loadings $U_{i}$ and scores $W_{i}$. Only with the block-sparsity constraint, there may be multiple candidates of both $U$ and $W$. Now we give a plausible strategy of defining $U$ and $W$ - by finding the column space of each $W_{i}$.

Remark 2.1. The decomposition of $Z_{k}$ 's into the partially-joint loading and score matrices is not unique. If instead of $W_{i}$ (and its corresponding loading matrix $\left.U_{(k), i}\right)$, one chooses $W_{i}^{\prime}=W_{i} R$, for an orthogonal matrix $R$, then the corresponding loading matrix becomes $U_{(k), i}^{\prime}=U_{(k), i} R$. Nevertheless, if $U_{(k), i}$ is zero, then $U_{(k), i} R$ is zero for any orthogonal $R$, so the block-sparsity is invariant to
the choices of basis.

### 2.2.2 Partially-joint score subspace and index-set ordering

We now define the partially-joint score subspace, a linear subspace spanned by the columns of a partially-joint score, in a constructive manner. The definition depends mainly on the following two concepts, the signal score subspace of signal block $Z_{k}$ and the ordering of index-sets.

Let the true signal matrix be further decomposed, $Z_{k}=U_{k} V_{k}$, as in the factor analysis, where $V_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times r_{k}}$ is the factor score matrix satisfying $V_{k}^{T} V_{k}=I_{r_{k}}$. We call the column space of $V_{k}$, denoted $\left[V_{k}\right]$, as the signal score subspace for $Z_{k}$. Note that $\left[V_{k}\right]$ is regarded as a rank- $r_{k}$ subspace of $\mathbb{R}^{n}$, spanned by the columns of $V_{k}$.

Our geometrical implication is as follows: If, given a $S \subset$ $\{1, \ldots, K\},\left[V_{k}\right]$ 's overlap, then the corresponding signal blocks $Z_{k}, k \in S$ share a common score, represented by the subspace $\cap_{k \in S}\left[V_{k}\right]$, which is at least partially-joint to signal blocks $Z_{k}$, $k \in S$. As we have assumed that signal blocks share a signal component through the corresponding partially-joint score, the intersections of signal score subspace plays an important role as a building block in constructing partially-joint score subspace.

However, one of the challenge of this approach is that indexsets, as subsets of $\{1, \ldots, K\}$, have a partially-ordered relation with respect to set-inclusion. As two index-sets can be either nested or intersected, the construction of a partially-joint score subspace
on one index-set may affect the one on the other. Thus we suggest a plausible way of constructing partially-joint score subspaces by giving an ordering among index-sets.

We give an ordering to index-sets, sorted by the number of elements in descending order. Each index-sets is allocated with index numbers as $S_{i}$ for $i=1, \ldots, 2^{K}-1$. We set $S_{1}=\{1, \ldots, K\}$, the maximal set, and the next $K$ index-sets are of size $K-1$, and then the next $K(K-1) / 2$ index-sets are of size $k-2, \ldots$ etc. Note that index-set ordering is not unique for given $K$, since there can be permutations among index-sets of the same size.

Example 2.1. For $K=3, S_{1}=\{1,2,3\}$ as appeared in the top row of Fig. 2.1, and the next three sets $\left(S_{2}, S_{3}, S_{4}\right)$ are given by the next row of the figure. That is, $S_{2}, S_{3}$, and $S_{4}$ are $\{1,2\},\{2,3\}$, $\{1,3\}$, respectively. Likewise, $S_{5}=\{1\}, S_{6}=\{2\}, S_{7}=\{3\}$. Each element $S_{i}$ stands for the indices of data blocks that potentially possess a common score. Of course, such indexing is not unique, and one may set, e.g., $S_{6}=\{3\}, S_{7}=\{2\}$.

Conditions to guarantee invariance of the decomposition with respect to different choices of indexing will be discussed in Section 2.4 .

Using the concepts of signal score subspace and index-set ordering, we now define partially-joint score subspace.

Definition 2.1. Suppose matched data matrices $X_{k}=Z_{k}+E_{k} \in$ $\mathbb{R}^{p_{k} \times n}$ for $k=1, \ldots, K$ with true signal block $Z_{k}$ are given. With an index-set ordering $S_{1}, \ldots, S_{2^{K}-1}$, a set of corresponding partiallyjoint score subspace $\left[W_{i}\right]$ 's for $i=1, \ldots, 2^{K}-1$ are constructed


Figure 2.1: An example of index-set ordering is depicted as the indexed partially-ordered set. Arrow $\rightarrow$ stands for $\subset$, e.g. $\{1\} \rightarrow$ $\{1,2\}$ means $\{1\} \subset\{1,2\}$.
sequentially

$$
\begin{aligned}
{\left[W_{1}\right] } & :=\cap_{k \in S_{1}}\left[V_{k}\right] \\
{\left[W_{2}\right] } & :=P_{1}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right), \\
& \vdots \\
{\left[W_{i}\right] } & :=\left(\underset{\substack{\left\{j: j<i, S_{j} \cap S_{i} \neq \phi\right\}}}{\bigcirc} P_{j}^{\perp}\right)\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Here, $P_{j}^{\perp}$ is the projection transformation of $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ onto the orthogonal complement of $\left[W_{j}\right]$. The notation $\bigcirc_{j \in J} P_{j}^{\perp}([A])$, for an indexed set $J \subset\left\{1, \ldots, 2^{K}-1\right\}$ and a subspace $[A]$, stands for the repeated applications of $P_{j}^{\perp}$ on $[A]$, where $P_{j}^{\perp}$ s are applied one by one by the increasing order of $j \in J$.

Note that depending on $\left\{\left[V_{k}\right]\right\}$, a $\left[W_{i}\right]$ may be $\{0\}$.

Example 2.2. Suppose $K=3$ and index-set ordering is as in Example 2.1, with $r\left(S_{1}\right)=r\left(S_{2}\right)=r\left(S_{4}\right)=r\left(S_{7}\right)=1$, and $r\left(S_{i}\right)=0$ otherwise. Partially-joint score subspaces are obtained as
$W_{1}=\cap_{k \in S_{1}}\left[V_{k}\right], W_{2}=P_{1}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{2}}\left[V_{l}\right]\right), W_{4}=P_{2}^{\perp} \circ P_{1}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{4}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)$ and $W_{7}=P_{4}^{\perp} \circ P_{1}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{7}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)$.

Partially-joint score subspaces have the following basic properties.
(1) The partially-joint score subspaces involved with each $Z_{k}$ can restore the signal score subspace, or

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[V_{k}\right]=+_{i \in\left\{k \in S_{i}\right\}}\left[W_{i}\right] \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

as shown in Lemma A. 3 in the supplementary material. Here the notation ' + ' means the sum of subspaces.
(2) For any $i \neq j,\left[W_{i}\right]$ and $\left[W_{j}\right]$ do not overlap, i.e., $\left[W_{i}\right] \cap\left[W_{j}\right]=$ $\{0\}$, but they are not necessarily orthogonal. However, if both $\left[W_{i}\right]$ and $\left[W_{j}\right]$ are related to a common data source, then they are orthogonal:

Lemma 2.1. For $i, j \in \mathcal{I}_{K}$ and $S_{i} \cap S_{j} \neq \phi,\left[W_{i}\right] \perp\left[W_{j}\right]$.
Lemma 2.1 ensures that all partially-joint score subspaces relevant to the $k$ th data block, $\left\{\left[W_{S_{i}}\right]: k \in S_{i}, i \in \mathcal{I}_{K}\right\}$, are orthogonal to each other. Thus, the subspaces in the right hand side of 2.3 are indeed orthogonal to each other.

### 2.2.3 Partially-joint score and loading

Given $\mathfrak{S}$, fix an orthogonal basis $W_{i} \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times r\left(S_{i}\right)}$ of $\left[W_{i}\right]$ for $i$ such that $\left|S_{i}\right|>0$. The potential partially-joint score is linked to the partially-joint loadings involved with $Z_{k}$ by

$$
U_{(k)}=Z_{k} W_{(k)}
$$

where $U_{(k)}$ and $W_{(k)}$ are column-wise concatenations of $U_{i}$ 's and $W_{i}$ 's for $i \in\left\{i: k \in S_{i}\right\}$. Indeed we can easily check that $U_{(k)} W_{(k)}^{T}=$ $Z_{k} W_{(k)}\left(W_{(k)}^{T} W_{(k)}\right)^{-1} W_{(k)}^{T}=Z_{k}$, since $W_{(k)}\left(W_{(k)}^{T} W_{(k)}\right)^{-1} W_{(k)}^{T}$ is the projection onto $\left[V_{k}\right]$ by the property (2.3) above. Then the partially-joint loadings $U_{(k), i}$ for $i \in\left\{i: k \in S_{i}\right\}$ are obtained by disjoining $U_{(k)}$. For $i \notin\left\{i: k \in S_{i}\right\}, U_{(k), i}=0$.

### 2.3 Estimation

In practice, the signal $Z_{k}$ and error $E_{k}$ of row-centered data matrices $X_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p_{k} \times n}$ for $k=1, \ldots, K$ are unknown. We assume that the ranks $r_{k}$ of the signal matrices are pre-determined and extract the signal matrix using a low-rank approximation of $X_{k}$, and write the rank $r_{k}$ approximation of $X_{k}$ by $\widehat{Z}_{k}$. The basis of the signal score subspace $\widehat{V}_{k}$ is given either by the right singular vectors of $Z_{k}$ from the SVD or by any off-the-shelf factor model estimates.

The overview of the estimation algorithm is as follows: (1) on the outer loop, we iterate through all index-sets $S_{i}$ on a given ordering, and (2) on the inner loop, we obtain the partially-joint score subspace estimate $\left[\widehat{W}_{i}\right]$ from $\left\{\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in S_{i}}$, identifying the basis of $\left[\widehat{W}_{i}\right]$ one-by-one.

The major challenge is that, we have the sample versions of signal blocks, $\widehat{Z}_{k}$, and their signal score subspaces, $\left[V_{k}\right]$, are contaminated by noise. Under noise, we may have $\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]=\{0\}$ even if $\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right] \neq\{0\}$. Thus, there is a need to give a slack on identifying the "intersection" of $\left[V_{k}\right]$ 's, accounting for random perturbations in $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$. We propose to use principal angles between subspaces for such identification, further developed in Section 2.3.1.

In Section 2.3.1, we propose a procedure that finds a basis matrix $\widehat{W}_{i}$ for the partially-joint score subspace estimate $\left[\widehat{W_{i}}\right]$ at each $i$ th step. The rank of the corresponding $S_{i}$ is set as $\hat{r}\left(S_{i}\right)=$ $\operatorname{rank}\left(\widehat{W}_{i}\right)$. Finishing the iteration over all $S_{i}$ 's, an estimated partiallyjoint structure $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}=\left\{\left(S_{i}, \hat{r}\left(S_{i}\right)\right\}\right.$ and a set of corresponding $\left[\widehat{W} \widehat{W}_{i}\right.$ 's are obtained. In Section 2.3.2, we then discuss the estimation of corresponding partially-joint loading matrices from $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}$ and $\widehat{w}$. In Section 2.3.3, a strategy for thresholding at the right principal angle is proposed.

### 2.3.1 Partially-joint Score Subspace Estimation

Our strategy on estimating partially-joint score subspace, $\left[\widehat{W}_{i}\right]$, is to estimate the partially-joint score subspace $\left[W_{i}\right]$ by collecting one-dimensional bases, that lie "close" to each and every score subspaces in $\left\{\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in S_{i}}$.

For the notion of closeness, the principal angle between subspaces is used as a threshold parameter $\lambda \in[0, \pi / 2)$. For now, $\lambda$ is treated as a pre-determined tuning parameter, and a data-driven choice of $\lambda$ will be discussed in Section 2.3.3,

For a given $\lambda \in[0, \pi / 2)$, the estimation algorithm is applied sequentially for $i=1, \ldots, 2^{K}-1$. At the $i$ th stage, we begin with $\mathcal{W}_{i}=\emptyset$, to which the identified one-dimensional bases of the partially-joint score subspace are added. Algorithm 1 summarizes the proposed partially-joint structure identification procedure, using steps (a)—(c).

Step (a) : Find a mean direction that lies closest to all score

```
Algorithm 1: Partially-joint Structure Identification
    input: \(\widehat{V}_{1}, \ldots, \widehat{V}_{K}, S_{1}, \ldots, S_{2^{K}-1}, \lambda\)
    for \(i=1,2, \ldots, 2^{K}-1\) do
        Set \(\mathcal{W}_{i}=\phi\);
        while \(\operatorname{dim}\left(\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]\right)>0\) for all \(k \in S_{i}\) do
            (a) Compute the mean direction \(\hat{w}\) of
            \(\left\{\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in S_{i}}\), see 2.4
            if the condition 2.5 is satisfied then
            (b) Let \(\mathcal{W}_{i} \leftarrow \mathcal{W}_{i} \cup\{\hat{w}\} ;\)
            (c) Update \(\widehat{V}_{k} \leftarrow \widehat{V}_{k, \text { trunc }}\) for each \(k \in S_{i}\)
            else
                break;
            end
        end
            Let \(\hat{r}\left(S_{i}\right)=\left|\mathcal{W}_{i}\right|\), write \(\widehat{W}_{i}\) for the \(n \times \hat{r}\left(S_{i}\right)\) matrix
            consisting of elements in \(\mathcal{W}_{i}\) and record
            \(\left(\widehat{S}_{i}, \hat{r}\left(S_{i}\right), \widehat{W}_{i}\right)\) in \(\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}\);
    end
    Result: \(\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}\)
```

subspaces $\left\{\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in S_{i}}$, as a candidate that may be included in $\widehat{W}_{i}$.
As a candidate for a basis vector of the partially joint score matrix, compute the mean direction $\hat{w}$ among $\left\{\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in S_{i}}$, provided that $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right] \neq\{0\}$ for all $k \in S_{i}$. The mean direction minimizes the sum of the squares of the subspace distances between a candidate $w$ and subspaces $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$ for $k \in S_{i}$, and is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{w}=\underset{w^{T} w=1}{\arg \min } \sum_{k \in S_{i}} d\left([w],\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]\right)^{2} \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $d([w],[B])=1 / \sqrt{2} \cdot\left\|w w^{T}-B B^{T}\right\|_{F}$ is the Frobenius-norm distance between subspaces $[w]$ and $[B]$ (Ye and Lim,2016). We chose the Frobenius norm, since for any choice of the basis $\widehat{V}_{k}$ for $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$,
$\sum_{k \in S_{i}} d\left([w],\left[\widehat{V}_{i}\right]\right)^{2}=\left|S_{i}\right|-w^{T}\left(\sum_{k \in S_{i}} \widehat{V}_{k} \widehat{V}_{k}^{T}\right) w=\left|S_{i}\right|-w^{T}\left(H H^{T}\right) w$, where $H$ is the matrix given by the column-wise binding of $\widehat{V}_{k}$ 's (Draper et al.,2014), and $\hat{w}$ is the first left singular vector of $H$. We mention in passing that $[\hat{w}]$ is the one-dimensional flag mean of subspaces $\left\{\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in S_{i}}$ (Draper et al.,2014).

Step (b) : Check whether all of the signal score subspaces $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$ are not too dispersed from $\hat{w}$ in (2.4).

For this, given the prespecified $\lambda$, we check whether the principal angle between the mean direction and each of $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$ is at most $\lambda$, i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
d\left([\hat{w}],\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]\right)<\sin (\lambda), \quad \text { for all } k \in S_{i} \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here, the principal angle $\theta([w],[B]):=\arcsin (d([w],[B])) \in$ $[0, \pi / 2]$ is the acute angle formed by the vector $w$ and the sub-
space $[B]$ (Björck and Golub,1973). If the condition (2.5) is not satisfied, then skip the following and move to the next stage for $S_{i+1}$. If (2.5) is satisfied, then $\mathcal{W}_{i}$ is updated to $\mathcal{W}_{i} \leftarrow \mathcal{W}_{i} \cup\{\hat{w}\}$.

Step (c) : Deflate each $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$ for $k \in S_{i}$, so that the next mean direction is orthogonal to previous ones.

We "peel" the basis $\hat{w}$, that has been added to $\mathcal{W}_{i}$, from each of $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right], k \in S_{i}$. Since $\hat{w}$ is not exactly in $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$, the onedimensional subspace closest to $\hat{w}$ is removed. Specifically, let [ $\widehat{V}_{k, \text { trunc }}$ ] be the orthogonal complement of $P_{\widehat{V}_{k}} \hat{w}$ within $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$. (Note that $\operatorname{dim}\left(\left[\widehat{V}_{k, \text { trunc }}\right]\right)=\operatorname{dim}\left(\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]\right)-1$.) Write $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$ for $\left[\widehat{V}_{k, \text { trunc }}\right]$, for each $k \in S_{i}$. If any $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$ for $k \in S_{i}$ becomes $\{0\}$, then move to the next stage for $S_{i+1}$. Otherwise, move back to step (a).

## We give an illustrative example for the three steps.

Example 2.3. Suppose $n=3$ and $K=3$. Assume that we are at the stage $S_{i}=\{1,2\}$ and $\left[\widehat{V}_{1}\right]$ has been deflated (in the previous stages) to be of dimension 1, while $\left[\widehat{V}_{2}\right]$ is of dimension 2, as in Fig. 2.2. There, $\left[\widehat{V}_{1}\right]$ is generated by $(\cos \pi / 6,0, \sin \pi / 6)^{T}$, and $\left[\widehat{V}_{2}\right]$ by $(1,0,0)^{T}$ and $(0,1,0)^{T}$. In Step (a), the mean direction is $\hat{w}=$ $(\cos \pi / 12,0, \sin \pi / 12)^{T}$. In Step (b), for $k=1,2, \theta\left([\hat{w}],\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]\right)=$ $\pi / 12$, (2.5) is satisfied for any tuning parameter $\lambda>\pi / 12$. Thus we say that $\left[\widehat{V}_{1}\right]$ and $\left[\widehat{V}_{2}\right]$ share a partially-joint score subspace, and $\hat{w}$ is included as a basis of $\left[W_{i}\right]$. In step (c), $\left[\hat{V}_{2}\right]$ is updated to $\left[\widehat{V}_{2}\right] \leftarrow\left[\widehat{V}_{2, \text { trunc }}\right]=\operatorname{span}\left((0,1,0)^{T}\right)$, and $\left[\widehat{V}_{1}\right]$ becomes $\{0\}$. Since there is no more scores left to exploit, we move onto the next stage for $S_{i+1}=\{2,3\}$.


Figure 2.2: A figurative description for computing partially-joint score subspace $\left[\widehat{W}_{i}\right]$, for $S_{i}=\{1,2\}$. The two-dimensional subspace $\left[\widehat{V}_{2}\right]$ is depicted as a disk. $w_{\{1,2\}}$ is the mean direction and $p_{2}$ stands for the projection of $w_{\{1,2\}}$ onto $\left[\widehat{V}_{2}\right]$.

For a singleton set $S_{i}=\{k\}$, the mean direction $\hat{w}$ is any unit vector in (the deflated) $\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$, and the condition 2.5 is always satisfied. Thus, for this case, $\widehat{W}_{i}=\widehat{V}_{k}$, in place of steps (a)— (c) above.

Note that the estimated partially-joint score matrices $\widehat{W}_{i}$ consist of orthogonal columns, and $\widehat{W}_{i}^{T} \widehat{W}_{i}=I_{\hat{r}\left(S_{i}\right)}$.

### 2.3.2 Partially-joint Loading Matrix Estimation

Given the partially-joint structure estimate $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}=\left\{\left(S_{i}, \hat{r}\left(S_{i}\right)\right): i \in\right.$ $\left.\mathcal{I}_{K}\right\}$ and the corresponding partially-joint score subspace estimates [ $\widehat{W}_{i}$ ]'s, we obtain the estimated partially-joint loading matrix $\widehat{U}$.

Let $\widehat{Z}=\left(\widehat{Z}_{1}^{T}, \ldots, \widehat{Z}_{K}^{T}\right)^{T} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times n}$, where $p=\sum_{k=1}^{K} p_{k}$. Denote the column-wise concatenation of $\widehat{W}_{i}$ as $\widehat{W} \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times \hat{r}}$, where $\hat{r}=$ $\sum_{i \in \mathcal{I}_{K}} \hat{r}\left(S_{i}\right)$.

We estimate the partially-joint loading matrix from the opti-
mization problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{U}=\underset{U \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times \hat{r}}}{\arg \min }\left\|\widehat{Z}-U \cdot \widehat{W}^{T}\right\|_{F}^{2} \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

with a constraint that $U$ in 2.6 has the block sparsity structure that corresponds to the estimated partially-joint structure $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}$. For example, given $K=2$ and $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}=\{(\{1,2\}, 2),(\{1\}, 1)\}, U$ has a block sparsity structure

$$
\begin{aligned}
& p_{1}\left\{\left[\begin{array}{c:c}
U_{(1), 1} & U_{(1), 2} \\
p_{2}\{ & {\left[\begin{array}{c} 
\\
U_{(2), 1}
\end{array}\right.} \\
& 0
\end{array}\right]\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

with the number of columns of $\left(U_{(1), 1}^{T}, U_{(2), 1}^{T}\right)^{T}$ and $U_{(1), 2}$ is two and one.

With the block-wise sparse constraint imposed, the objective function (2.6) for $U$ can be written separately for each data block, i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\widehat{Z}-U \cdot \widehat{W}^{T}\right\|_{F}^{2}=\sum_{k=1}^{K}\left\|\widehat{Z}_{k}-U_{(k)} \widehat{W}_{(k)}^{T}\right\|_{F}^{2} \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here $U_{(k)}$ and $\widehat{W}_{(k)}$ are the column-wise concatenation of each $U_{(k), i}$ 's and $\widehat{W_{i}}$ 's with $i \in\left\{i: k \in S_{i}\right.$ and $\left.\widehat{r}\left(S_{i}\right)>0\right\}$. The minimizer of 2.7 is

$$
\widehat{U}_{(k)}=\widehat{Z}_{k} \widehat{W}_{(k)}\left(\widehat{W}_{(k)}^{T} \widehat{W}_{(k)}\right)^{-1}
$$

and $\widehat{U}_{(k) i}$ for $i \in \mathcal{J}_{(k)}$ are obtained by disjoining $\widehat{U}_{(k)}$. By the constraint imposed, set $\widehat{U}_{(k) i}=0$ if $k \notin S_{i}$. The estimated partiallyjoint loading matrix consists of $\widehat{U}_{(k) i}$, and is denoted by $\widehat{U} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times \hat{r}}$.

### 2.3.3 Tuning Parameter Selection

The partially-joint structure identification, proposed in Section 3.1, depends heavily on the tuning parameter $\lambda \in[0, \pi / 2)$. If $\lambda$ is too small, then all scores are identified as individual scores, specific to each data blocks. If $\lambda$ is too large, then individual and partially-joint scores may be falsely identified as fully-joint scores.

We use data splitting to select the value of tuning parameter $\lambda \in[0, \pi / 2)$. For a single instance of data splitting, split $n$ samples of $X=\left[X_{1}^{T}, \ldots, X_{K}^{T}\right]^{T}$ into two groups of equal proportions, the training set $X_{t r}=\left[X_{t r, 1}^{T}, \ldots, X_{t r, K}^{T}\right]^{T}$ and the test set $X_{t e s t}=$ $\left[X_{\text {test }, 1}^{T}, \ldots, X_{\text {test }, K}^{T}\right]^{T}$.

Given the signal rank $r_{k}$ of each $X_{k}$, we then extract the training signal matrices $\widehat{Z}_{t r, k}$ for $k=1, \ldots, K$ using the rank $r_{k}$ approximation of $X_{t r, k}$. For each $\lambda$ on the tuning parameter grid, we identify the partially-joint structure from $\widehat{Z}_{t r, k}$ 's, and obtain the partially-joint score $\widehat{W}_{t r, \lambda}$ and the partially-joint loading matrix $\widehat{U}_{t r, \lambda}$, as discussed in Sections 3.1 and 3.2.

To assess the degrees to which the estimates are generalized to the test set, we first evaluate the score matrix for the test set, given by $\widehat{U}_{t r, \lambda}$. The test score matrix $\widehat{W}_{t e s t, \lambda}$ is defined as the minimizer $\widehat{W}_{\text {test }, \lambda} \in \mathbb{R}^{n_{\text {test }} \times \hat{r}}$ of

$$
\left\|X_{t e s t}-\widehat{U}_{t r, \lambda} W^{T}\right\|_{F}^{2}
$$

subject to $W^{T} W=W_{t r, \lambda}^{T} W_{t r, \lambda}$. The test score matrix is computed as $\widehat{W}_{\text {test }, \lambda}=P_{\lambda} Q_{\lambda}^{T} D_{\lambda} C_{\lambda}^{T}$, where $P_{\lambda}$ and $Q_{\lambda}$ are left and right singular vector matrices of $X_{t e s t}^{T} \cdot \widehat{U}_{t r, \lambda}=P_{\lambda} \Sigma_{\lambda} Q_{\lambda}^{T}$, and where $D_{\lambda}^{2}$ and $C_{\lambda}$ are diagonal and right singular vector matrices of
$W_{t r, \lambda}^{T} W_{t r, \lambda}=C_{\lambda} D_{\lambda}^{2} C_{\lambda}^{T}$, using the Eckart-Young theorem (Eckart and Young,1936).

Let $\tilde{\lambda}$ be the value of $\lambda$ for which the minimum of the empirical risk is attained. The empirical risk, defined for $\lambda \in[0, \pi / 2]$, is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Risk}(\lambda)=\sum_{k=1}^{K} \frac{\left\|X_{t e s t, k}-\widehat{U}_{t r, \lambda,(k)} \widehat{W}_{\text {test }, \lambda}^{T}\right\|_{F}^{2}}{\left\|X_{t e s t, k}\right\|_{F}^{2}} \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\widehat{U}_{t r, \lambda,(k)}$ is the $k$ th row block of $\widehat{U}_{t r, \lambda}$. A similar form was used in Gaynanova and Li (2019). The corresponding partiallyjoint structure is $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{t r}(\tilde{\lambda})$.

Finally, we generalize $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{t r}(\tilde{\lambda})$ to the whole data. Let $\widehat{Z}_{k}$ be the rank $r_{k}$ approximation of $X_{k}$. Again on the grid of $\lambda$ 's, we obtain the partially-joint structure $\mathfrak{S}(\lambda)$ from $\widehat{Z}_{k}$ 's. Then we choose the best value $\widehat{\lambda}$ that minimize $\operatorname{diff}\left(\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{t r}(\tilde{\lambda}), \mathfrak{S}(\lambda)\right)$, where $d$ is a measure of dissimilarity between two structure, which will be defined shortly. Indeed, $d$ is a special version of matching distance between multi-sets (Bolt et al.,2022).

## Measure of Dissimilarity

In generalizing $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{t r}(\tilde{\lambda})$ to the whole data, we compute dissimilarity measure between $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{t r}(\tilde{\lambda})$ and $\mathfrak{S}(\lambda)$ for each candidate $\lambda$. Here we define a measure of dissimilarity using $K$-row binary structure matrices, for example, when $K=2,((\{1,2\}, 2),(\{1\}, 1))$ corresponds to

$$
\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 1 & 1 \\
1 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

Our strategy is that we consider the binary structure matrix as a multi-set of binary column vectors (of size $K$ ). We devise a
measure that swiftly captures dissimilarity between two multi-sets, under a situation that we need to compute dissimilarity as many time as the number of $\lambda$ 's on grid for each instance of splitting.

Let $d_{H}(a, b)$ be the number of elements between column vectors $a, b \in\{0,1\}^{K}$, i.e. Hamming distance, which we will use as a ground distance. The dissimilarity measure $d(\mathfrak{A}, \mathfrak{B})$ between two partially-joint structure $\mathfrak{A}, \mathfrak{B}$ is defined as follows

$$
d(\mathfrak{A}, \mathfrak{B})=\sum_{a \in A \backslash B} d_{H}(a, B \backslash A)+\sum_{b \in B \backslash A} d_{H}(b, A \backslash B),
$$

where $A$ and $B$ are the binary structure matrices for $\mathfrak{A}$ and $\mathfrak{B}$. The set minus operation, denoted $\backslash$, is defined on a class of binary matrices of $K$ rows, regarded as a multi-set of binary columns. See Section B. 1 of the supplementary material for an exemplary description.

Remark 2.2. It should be noted that d is not generally a distance: the conditions (1) d( $\mathfrak{A}, \mathfrak{B})$ if and only if $\mathfrak{A}=\mathfrak{B}$ and (2) $d(\mathfrak{A}, \mathfrak{B})=$ $d(\mathfrak{B}, \mathfrak{A})$ hold, but (3) the triangular inequality does not.

### 2.4 Theory

Given an ordering of index-sets in $\left(\mathscr{2}^{\mathcal{K}} \backslash\{\phi\}, \subset\right)$ and the signal blocks $Z=\left\{Z_{k}: k \in \mathcal{K}\right\}$, the partially-joint structure $\mathfrak{S}(Z)=$ $\left\{\left(S_{i}, r\left(S_{i}\right), W_{i}\right): i \in \mathcal{I}_{K}\right\}$ is uniquely determined. Unfortunately, for different orderings of $\left(2^{\mathcal{K}} \backslash\{\phi\}, \subset\right)$, the ranks $r\left(S_{i}\right)$ and the partially-joint score subspaces $\left[W_{i}\right]$ may be different. In this section, we introduce conditions on relations among $\left[V_{k}\right]$ 's for $\mathfrak{S}(Z)$ to be uniquely determined regardless of the choice of the orders of $\left(2^{\mathcal{K}} \backslash\{\phi\}, \subset\right)$.

For each $l=1, \ldots, K$, let $\mathcal{J}_{l}=\left\{i \in \mathcal{I}_{K}:\left|S_{i}\right|=l\right\}$ be the set of all indices with size $l$. For $l=1, \ldots, K-1$, we set $\left[I_{l}\right]=+_{i \in\left\{i:\left|S_{i}\right|>l\right\}}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)=+_{i \in\left\{i:\left|S_{i}\right|>l\right\}}\left[W_{i}\right]$, and the projection onto $\left[I_{l}\right]^{\perp}$ in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ is denoted by $P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}$. Note that when evaluating the rank for $\left[W_{i}\right]$ for $i \in \mathcal{J}_{l}$, the definition of $\left[W_{i}\right]$ in (??) utilizes the deflated score subspaces orthogonal to $\left[I_{l}\right]$, using the given order of $S_{i}$ 's among $i \in \mathcal{J}_{l}$. We say $\left\{\left[V_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in \mathcal{K}}$ to be relatively independent if, for every $l=1, \ldots, K-1$ and $i \in \mathcal{J}_{l}, P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)$ is linearly independent to $\left[C_{l,-i}\right]=+_{j \in \mathcal{J}_{l} \backslash\{i\}}\left(P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)\right)$. In words, $\left\{\left[V_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in \mathcal{K}}$ is relatively independent, if for each and every layer $\mathcal{J}_{l}$, each deflated subspace is lineary independent to $\left[C_{l,-i}\right]$, the sum of the other deflated subspaces in the layer $\mathcal{J}_{l}$. If $P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)$ is orthogonal to $\left[C_{l,-i}\right]$ for every $l=1, \ldots, K-1$ and $i \in \mathcal{J}_{l}$, then $\left\{\left[V_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in \mathcal{K}}$ is said to be relatively orthogonal. We immediately check that relative orthogonality implies relative independence.

Theorem 2.1. Given matched data matrices $X_{k}=Z_{k}+E_{k} \in$ $\mathbb{R}^{p_{k} \times n}$ for $k=1, \ldots, K$ with true signal $Z_{k}$ and error $E_{k}$, if $\left\{\left[V_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in \mathcal{K}}$, the collection of $Z_{k}$ 's signal score subspaces, is relatively independent, then, regardless of the ordering of index-sets in $\left(2^{\mathcal{K}} \backslash\{\phi\}, \subset\right)$, there exists a unique set of pairs $\left\{\left(S_{i}, r\left(S_{i}\right)\right)\right\}_{i \in \mathcal{I}_{K}}$.

Under only the relative independence condition, the determination of the partially-joint score subspaces $\left[W_{i}\right]$ corresponding to $S_{i}, i \in \mathcal{I}_{K}$, may not be unique, and depends on the ordering of index-sets (see Examples A. 3 and A. 4 in the supplementary materials). To ensure uniqueness of $\left[W_{i}\right]$ 's, we require a rather strong assumption. We say that $\left\{\left[V_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in \mathcal{K}}$ is absolutely orthogonal, if (1) $\left\{\left[V_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in \mathcal{K}}$ satisfies relative orthogonality, and (2) for
each $l=1, \ldots, K-1$ and for every $i \in \mathcal{J}_{l}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)=P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right), \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left[J_{i}\right]=+_{j \in \mathcal{J}_{i,>l}}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)=+_{j \in \mathcal{J}_{i,>l}}\left[W_{j}\right]$ and $\mathcal{J}_{i,>l}=\{j$ : $\left.\left|S_{j}\right|>l, S_{i} \cap S_{k} \neq \phi\right\}$. In Example 2.1, when $l=1$ and $i=6$, (2.9) holds if $\left(\bigcirc_{j \in\{1,2,3,4\}} P_{j}^{\perp}\right)\left(\left[V_{1}\right]\right)=\left(\bigcirc_{j \in\{1,2,3\}} P_{j}^{\perp}\right)\left(\left[V_{2}\right]\right)$. Note that for $i=6, S_{i}=\{2\}$ and the index-sets $S_{j}$ 's for $j \in \mathcal{J}_{i,>l}$ are $S_{1}=\{1,2,3\}, S_{2}=\{1,2\}, S_{3}=\{2,3\}$, excluding $S_{4}=\{1,3\}$.

Theorem 2.2. Given matched data matrices $X_{k}=Z_{k}+E_{k} \in$ $\mathbb{R}^{p_{k} \times n}$ for $k=1, \ldots, K$ with true signal $Z_{k}$ and error $E_{k}$, if $\left\{\left[V_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in \mathcal{K}}$ is absolutely orthogonal, then partially-joint score subspaces $\left[W_{i}\right]$ for $i \in \mathcal{I}_{K}$ are uniquely determined.

The uniqueness of each partially-joint loading subspace $\left[U_{(k), i}\right]$ is deduced from the uniqueness of $\left[W_{i}\right]$ 's.

Corollary 2.1. Given matched data matrices $X_{k}=Z_{k}+E_{k} \in$ $\mathbb{R}^{p_{k} \times n}$ for $k=1, \ldots, K$ with true signal $Z_{k}$ and error $E_{k}$, if $\left\{\left[V_{k}\right]\right\}_{k \in \mathcal{K}}$ is absolutely orthogonal, then each partially-joint loading subspace $\left[U_{(k), i}\right]$ is uniquely determined for $k=1, \ldots, K$ and $i \in \mathcal{I}_{(k)}$.

We provide proofs of theorems in this section and examples for relative independence and absolute orthogonality in Section A. 2 of the supplementary materials.

### 2.5 Simulation Study

### 2.5.1 Example Dataset Generation

In the simulation study, we use the following data generation setting for numerically analyzing the performance of our proposal. Throughout, we use $K=3$ blocks of data sets, in which the association structures are given by the ranks of index-sets.

First, we set a pre-determined rank $r\left(S_{i}\right)$ for each index-set $S_{i}$ for $i=1, \ldots, 2^{K}-1$. The generic partially-joint score matrix $W_{\text {comp }, i} \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times r\left(S_{i}\right)}$ for each index-set is a column-wise concatenation of randomly generated vectors $w_{\text {comp }, i, j}$ for $j=1, \ldots, r\left(S_{i}\right)$. Each $w_{c o m p, i, j}$ are generated element-wise and the entries of $w_{c o m p, i, j}$ follows $\mathcal{N}\left(0, \sigma_{i, j}^{2}\right)$ independently; not only independent within a $w_{\text {comp }, i, j}$, but independent between $w_{c o m p, i, j}$ 's as well. The magnitude of signal $\sigma_{i, j}^{2}$ 's depends on the simulation settings, and summarized as $\sigma_{M}^{2}=\left\{\left(\sigma_{i, j}^{2}\right): i \in \mathcal{I}_{K}, j=1, \ldots, r\left(S_{i}\right), r\left(S_{i}\right)>0\right\}$. The column-wise concatenation of $W_{\text {comp }, i}$ is denoted $W_{\text {comp }}$ of size $n \times \sum_{i=1}^{2^{K}-1} r\left(S_{i}\right)$.

The generic loading matrices $U_{\text {comp }, k, i} \in \mathbb{R}^{p_{k} \times r\left(S_{i}\right)}$ for $i=$ $1, \ldots, 2^{K}-1$ and $k=1, \ldots, K$ are given as follows. The entries of $U_{c o m p, k, i}$ are generated independently from the uniform distribution, $\operatorname{Unif}(0,1)$, and all the columns of $U_{\text {comp }, k, i}$ are scaled. We give $U_{\text {comp,k,i}}$ orthonormality by the QR decomposition. We then derive the generic signal matrix $Z_{k}$ for $k=1 \ldots, K$ by $Z_{k}=$ weight $_{k} \cdot \sum_{i=1}^{2^{K}-1}\left(U_{c o m p, k, i} \cdot W_{\text {comp }, i}\right)$, where weight ${ }_{k}$ 's are weights for each dataset, which reflect the magnitude of signals. The concatenation of generic loading matrices is denoted $U_{\text {comp }}$,
and is of size $\sum_{k=1}^{K} p_{k} \times \sum_{i=1}^{2^{K}-1} r\left(S_{i}\right)$.
The error matrix $E_{k}$ is generated element-wisely, such that $e_{k, i j} \sim \mathcal{N}\left(0, \sigma^{2}\right)$ independently for $i=1, \ldots, p_{k}$ and $j=1, \ldots, n$. The magnitude of error $\sigma^{2}$ is set as the reciprocal of the signal-tonoise ratio (SNR), $\sigma^{2}=1 / \mathrm{SNR}$, where SNR is predetermined as a simulation setting.

We use the following six models. We set $n=200, p_{1}=p_{2}=$ $p_{3}=100$ and weight $_{1}=$ weight $_{2}=$ weight $_{3}=1$, for all six cases.

1. (Individuals) $\mathfrak{S}=\{(\{1\}, 2),(\{2\}, 2),(\{3\}, 2)\}, \sigma_{M}^{2}=\{(1.4,0.8),(1.3,0.7)$, $(1.2,0.6)\}$
2. (Fully joint) $\mathfrak{S}=\{(\{1,2,3\}, 2)\}, \sigma_{M}^{2}=\{(1.0,0.9)\}$
3. (Circular, partially joint) $\mathfrak{S}=\{(\{1,2\}, 2),(\{1,3\}, 2),(\{2,3\}, 2)\}$, $\sigma_{M}^{2}=\{(1.4,0.8),(1.3,0.7),(1.2,0.6)\}$
4. (Mix of fully joint and individuals) $\mathfrak{S}=\{(\{1,2,3\}, 2),(\{1\}, 2),(\{2\}, 2)$, $(\{3\}, 2)\}, \sigma_{M}^{2}=\{(1.5,0.8),(1.4,0.7),(1.3,0.6),(1.2,0.5)\}$
5. (Fully joint and partially joint) $\mathfrak{S}=(\{1,2,3\}, 2),(\{1,2\}, 2),(\{1,3\}, 2)$, $(\{2,3\}, 2)\}, \sigma_{M}^{2}=\{(1.5,0.8),(1.4,0.7),(1.3,0.6),(1.2,0.5)\}$
6. (All possible combinations) $\mathfrak{S}=(\{1,2,3\}, 2),(\{1,2\}, 2),(\{1,3\}, 2)$, $(\{2,3\}, 2),(\{1\}, 2),(\{2\}, 2),(\{3\}, 2)\}, \sigma_{M}^{2}=\{(1.8,0.8),(1.7,0.7),(1.6,0.6)$, $(1.5,0.5),(1.4,0.4),(1.3,0.3),(1.2,0.2)\}$

### 2.5.2 Results on Comparative Study

In this subsection, we numerically compare the performance of our proposal to other competitors, including SLIDE (Gaynanova and Li,2019), COBS (Gao et al.,2020), AJIVE (Feng et al.,2018),
and JIVE (Lock et al.,2013). Note that from the estimates of each method, the partially-joint structure $\mathfrak{S}$ can be extracted, as well as the concatenated partially-joint score matrix $\widehat{W}$ and loading matrix $\widehat{U}$. See Section A.3.2 of the supplementary materials for a brief review of these methods. Our proposal will be called the method of partially-joint structure identification, or PSI for short.

To assess the efficacy of finding the true partially-joint structure $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}$ and proper loading and score matrices, we use the following measures.
(1) Partially-joint structure $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}$ : The rate of finding the true partially-joint structure, $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}\left(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}\right)$.
(2) Partially-joint loading matrix $\widehat{U}$ : We find the difference between $U_{\text {comp }}$ and $\widehat{U}$ as follows. We denote the principal angles between $U_{c o m p, k, i}$ and $\widehat{U}_{(k .)}$ by $\theta_{U, k, i, j}$ for $k=1, \ldots, K$, $i=1, \ldots, 2^{K}-1$ and $j=1, \ldots, r\left(S_{i}\right)$. We report the average of all the values of $\theta_{U, k, i, j}$ 's as $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$.
(3) Partially-joint score matrix $\widehat{W}$ : We find the difference between $W_{\text {comp }}$ and $\widehat{W}$ as follows. We denote the principal angle between $w_{\text {comp }, i, j}$ and $\widehat{W}$ by $\theta_{W, i, j}$ for $i=1, \ldots, 2^{K}-1$ and $j=1, \ldots, r\left(S_{i}\right)$. We report the average of all the values of $\theta_{W, i, j}$ 's as $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$.

In the comparative study, the measures $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}), \bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ and $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ were computed to assess the performance of PSI and other four methods. The simulation was conducted on different values of SNR (10 and 5) for the example models 1 to 6 . Given a fixed true partially-joint loading matrix $U_{\text {comp }}$, one hundred data

Table 2.1: Comparative Study on Model 1 to 3. The unit for $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ is percent. Numbers in parantheses are standard deviations.

| Model | SNR | Measure | PSI | SLIDE bcv | COBS | AJIVE | JIVE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 | 10 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 100 | 1 | 18 | 93 | 5 |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ | 13.69 (0.48) | 25.26 (14.08) | 52.59 (9.43) | 13.72 (0.52) | 13.62 (0.49) |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ | 18.47 (0.58) | 19.55 (0.79) | 20.85 (1.39) | 18.55 (0.95) | 18.62 (0.64) |
|  | 5 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 100 | 3 | 48 | 93 | 6 |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ | 20.01 (0.76) | 36.26 (14.96) | 67.24 (6.13) | 20.14 (0.9) | 19.94 (0.77) |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ | 25.96 (0.71) | 28.14 (2.19) | 34.48 (3.41) | 26.33 (1.8) | 26.1 (0.75) |
| 2 | 10 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 100 | 100 | 100 | 100 | 0 |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ | 12.99 (0.59) | 13.03 (0.59) | 19.27 (1.82) | 12.99 (0.59) | 13.33 (0.63) |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ | 10.86 (0.55) | 11.47 (0.77) | 11.17 (0.62) | 10.86 (0.55) | 10.67 (0.53) |
|  | 5 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 100 | 100 | 100 | 100 | 0 |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ | $18.43(0.88)$ | 18.46 (0.88) | $32.35(2.8)$ | $18.43(0.88)$ | $19.47 \text { (1) }$ |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ | 15.66 (0.85) | 16 (0.83) | 17.14 (1.12) | 15.66 (0.85) | $15.38(0.83)$ |
| 3 | 10 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 100 | 22 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ | 13.27 (0.41) | 24.47 (8.16) | 24.22 (2.82) | 13.68 (0.57) | 13.32 (0.44) |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ | 13.52 (0.39) | 14.05 (0.48) | 14.66 (0.54) | 13.73 (0.53) | 13.12 (0.42) |
|  | 5 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 89 | 56 | 1 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ | 19.13 (0.71) | 34.52 (7.09) | 45.44 (5.54) | 20.39 (0.84) | 19.61 (0.75) |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ | 19.52 (0.62) | 19.75 (0.66) | 26.92 (2.77) | 20.93 (1.15) | 18.84 (0.61) |

sets were generated for each SNR value. We tested all 5 methods over these datasets.

We give each method the initial ranks as follows : (1) PSI, AJIVE, JIVE : Truncate each $X_{k}$ with its true rank. For example, in Model 3, each $X_{i}$ was truncated with the true rank 4, (2) SLIDE : Use the whole $X$, the row-concatenation of $X_{i}$ 's. After standardization, $X$ is then truncated with the sum of each indexset's true rank (for example, $6=2+2+2$ in Model 3), and (3) COBS : Use the whole $X$, the row-concatenation of $X_{i}$ 's. Set the number of components as the sum of each index-set's true rank.

Average and standard deviation for each measure are reported in Tables 2.1 and 2.2.

In the example model 1 , in which case there are only individual

Table 2.2: Comparative Study on Model 4 to 6.

| Model | SNR | Measure | PSI | SLIDE bcv | COBS | AJIVE | JIVE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 4 | 10 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 100 | 2 | 24 | 100 | 0 |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ | 13.31 (0.36) | 20.03 (6.06) | 34.19 (4.37) | 13.3 (0.36) | 13.45 (0.37) |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ | 17.28 (0.43) | 18.07 (0.47) | 19.69 (1.4) | 17.1 (0.42) | 17.36 (0.43) |
|  | 5 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 100 | 8 | 24 | 100 | 0 |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ | 19.23 (0.57) | 28.35 (8.82) | 47.6 (2.85) | 19.19 (0.57) | 19.63 (0.61) |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ | 24.37 (0.64) | 27.65 (3.66) | 33.98 (2.65) | 24.1 (0.63) | $24.04(0.66)$ |
| 5 | 10 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 100 | 35 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ | 13.28 (0.29) | 22.01 (6.24) | 24.2 (2.2) | 13.49 (0.38) | $13.42(0.33)$ |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ | 13.28 (0.32) | 13.68 (0.41) | 14.51 (0.58) | 13.4 (0.43) | 12.9 (0.49) |
|  | 5 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 69 | 58 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ | 19.19 (0.59) | 29.23 (4.95) | 41.43 (3.36) | 19.79 (0.53) | 19.73 (0.53) |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ | 19.14 (0.6) | 19.22 (0.62) | 26.37 (1.89) | 19.86 (0.72) | 18.33 (0.64) |
| 6 | 10 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 99 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ | 14.28 (0.33) | 29.54 (9.7) | 30.71 (2.27) | 14.12 (0.32) | 14.31 (0.34) |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ | 17.88 (0.45) | 20.9 (2.29) | 24.53 (1.21) | 17.66 (0.45) | $17.54 \text { (0.49) }$ |
|  | 5 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 55 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(U, \widehat{U})$ | 21.27 (0.69) | 29.8 (9.71) | 44.91 (2.77) | 21.24 (0.73) | 21.44 (0.67) |
|  |  | $\bar{\theta}(W, \widehat{W})$ | 25.71 (0.84) | 28.45 (1.68) | 34.2 (1.09) | 25.95 (1.07) | 24.52 (0.84) |

scores, PSI and AJIVE identified the true partially-joint structure for almost all instances. In the example model 2 , in which case there are only joint score, all methods but JIVE find the true structure for almost all SNRs and instances. PSI, SLIDE and AJIVE have estimated identical score subspaces. In the example model 3 , in which partially-joint scores are entangled in a cyclic structure, PSI boasts superior performances in identifying the true structures. Table 2.1 confirms these observations.

In the example model 4 , in which case both joint and individual scores are composited, both PSI and AJIVE showed superior performance in identifying the true structure. Our method was as competent in estimating score subspaces as AJIVE. In the example model 5 and 6, the complicated cases with joint, partially-joint and individual scores mixed, PSI is prominent in estimating true structure, loading and score subspaces. See Table 2.2.

### 2.5.3 Results on Imbalanced Signal Strength between Joint and Individual Components

Next, we consider cases where the signal strengths of joint components and individual components are grossly imbalanced. Consider a new model, with $K=3$ and $p_{1}=p_{2}=p_{3}=100$, whose index-set ordering is $S_{1}=\{1,2,3\}, S_{5}=\{1\}, S_{6}=\{2\}$ and $S_{7}=\{3\}$. We set inherent joint rank $r\left(S_{1}\right)=10$ and individual ranks $r\left(S_{5}\right)=r\left(S_{6}\right)=r\left(S_{7}\right)=10$. Other index-sets have zero ranks, $r\left(S_{2}\right)=r\left(S_{3}\right)=r\left(S_{4}\right)=0$. Throughout, $n=200$.

For the case in which there are larger variations in the joint component than the individual components, we set $\sigma_{1, j}^{2} \gg \sigma_{i, j}^{2}$ for $i=5,6,7$ and all $j$ 's. In the opposite case, we give larger variations in the individual components than the joint component, $\sigma_{i, j}^{2} \gg \sigma_{1, j}^{2}$ for $i=5,6,7$ and all $j$ 's. Details are given in Section A.3.5 of the supplementary materials.

We carried out comparative simulations on both cases at SNR levels $\infty$ and 5 . Not only the success rate of finding true structure but also the numbers of estimated joint and individual components were evaluated. In Table 2.3 , in which case the joint component has larger variations, PSI, AJIVE and JIVE showed superior performances to other methods. SLIDE only succeeded in finding joint components even when there is no noise. When the individual components have larger variations, in Table 2.4, our method still shows better performances in finding both joint and individual components when there is no noise, but failed to estimate any joint structure with noise. At SNR 5, AJIVE and JIVE was the most competent among all methods.

Table 2.3: The case where the joint component has larger variations than the individual components.

| SNR | Measure | PSI | SLIDE bcv | COBS | AJIVE | JIVE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\infty$ | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | $\mathbf{1 0 0}$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | $\mathbf{1 0 0}$ |
|  | Joint | $\mathbf{1 0}(\mathbf{0})$ | $\mathbf{1 0}(\mathbf{0})$ | $39.58(0.59)$ | $3.79(1.95)$ | $\mathbf{1 0}(\mathbf{0})$ |
|  | Individual | $\mathbf{3 0}(\mathbf{0})$ | $0(0)$ | $0.02(0.14)$ | $48.63(5.84)$ | $\mathbf{3 0}(\mathbf{0})$ |
| 5 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | $\mathbf{1 0 0}$ | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 |
|  | Joint | $\mathbf{1 0}(\mathbf{0})$ | $\mathbf{1 0}(\mathbf{0})$ | $12.49(1.76)$ | $\mathbf{1 0}(\mathbf{0})$ | $\mathbf{1 0}(\mathbf{0})$ |
|  | Individual | $\mathbf{3 0 ( 0 )}$ | $0(0)$ | $18.54(2.61)$ | $33.19(1.01)$ | $43.29(1.53)$ |

Table 2.4: The case where the individual components have larger variations than the joint components.

| SNR | Measure | PSI | SLIDE bcv | COBS | AJIVE | JIVE |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\infty$ | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | $\mathbf{1 0 0}$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
|  | Joint | $\mathbf{1 0}(\mathbf{0})$ | $9.84(0.77)$ | $38.33(1.46)$ | $3.67(1.74)$ | $15.05(1.7)$ |
|  | Individual | $\mathbf{3 0 ( 0 )}$ | $25.88(1.29)$ | $0.14(0.35)$ | $48.99(5.21)$ | $27.35(1.2)$ |
| 5 | $\mathbb{E} \mathbb{1}(\mathfrak{S}=\widehat{\mathfrak{S}})$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | $\mathbf{1}$ |
|  | Joint | $0(0)$ | $\mathbf{1 0 . 1 8 ( 1 . 4 2 )}$ | $15.28(3.04)$ | $8.27(0.58)$ | $11.38(2.94)$ |
|  | Individual | $59.4(1.41)$ | $21.48(1.77)$ | $12.33(2.31)$ | $36.41(1.88)$ | $\mathbf{2 7 . 2 7}(\mathbf{1 . 1 4})$ |

### 2.6 Real Data Analysis

In this section, we apply the proposed PSI to a dataset called EGAS0000100174, a blood cancer multi-omics data set linked to a drug response panel (Dietrich et al.,2018). We have chosen to use 121 cases diagnosed with chronic lymphocytic leukemia (CLL). The drug response panel ( $X_{\text {Drug }}$ ) records the ex vivo cell viabilities at a series of 5 concentrations, for each of 62 drugs that target onco-related pathways or are used widely in clinical practice. This multi-omics data set consists of the genome-wide DNA methylation profiles and the RNA sequencing profiles. The top 5,000 most variable CpG sites were selected ( $X_{\mathrm{Meth}}$ ) from the 450 K il-
lumina assay DNA methylation profile. As for the RNA sequencing profile, we selected the top 5,000 gene expressions with the largest stabilized variances ( $X_{\operatorname{Exp}}$ ) from the high-throughput sequencing (HTS) assay. In summary, we have three blocks of data sets $X_{\text {Drug }} \in \mathbb{R}^{121 \times 310}, X_{\text {Meth }} \in \mathbb{R}^{121 \times 5000}$ and $X_{\text {Exp }} \in \mathbb{R}^{121 \times 5000}$.

We repeat the estimation process over 100 repetitions (of data splitting) and select the mode structure, that is, the estimated partially-joint structure that appears the most out of 100 repetitions. The estimated mode structure is

$$
\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}=\{(\{\text { Drug }, \operatorname{Meth}\}, 1),(\{\operatorname{Drug}\}, 4),(\{\operatorname{Meth}\}, 41),(\{\operatorname{Exp}\}, 3)\},
$$

which means that PSI detected the index-set \{Drug, Meth\} of rank 1, and no fully-joint score or other forms of partially-joint scores were detected. This structure appeared 53 times out of 100 repetitions. The index-set \{Drug, Meth\} of rank 1 stands for the existence of one-dimensional latent score, partially-joint for Drug and Meth data sets (but not for Exp data set).

PSI showed better performance in computation time over other methods. In an Intel ${ }^{\circledR}$ Xeon ${ }^{\circledR}$ CPU E5-2640 v4 @ 2.40 GHz system, it took 9.38 seconds per single data splitting instance (54.56 seconds for 100 instances with 40 cores). In comparison, the SLIDE with bcr method detected the same structure as our method, but it took almost 9 hours on the same machine. The COBS yielded an eccentric result, giving the fully-joint score of rank 50 , taking about 14 minutes.

PSI was also robust over different choices of initial ranks. As a preprocessing, we set the ranks of the signal matrices using the principal component analysis which accounts for cumulative pro-
portion of variances at $30 \%, 40 \%, 50 \%$ and $60 \%$. Resulting signal ranks for Drug, Meth and Exp datasets are $(2,6,1),(2,15,1)$, $(3,28,2)$ and $(5,42,3)$, respectively. For all cases, PSI detected the same index-set $\{$ Drug, Meth $\}$ of rank 1.

The analysis by PSI for the patient sample multi-block data reveals a particular pattern in the latent partially-joint score, which cannot be identified by applying, e.g. principal component analysis to each data block. To support this claim, we plot the reconstructed matrices $\widehat{U}_{(k), i} \widehat{W}_{i}^{T}$ for the identified partially-joint and individual parts of the data in Fig. 2.3. Both the samples and the variables of $X_{\text {Drug }}$ are ordered by a hierarchical bi-clustering applied to the partially-joint component $\widehat{U}_{(\text {Drug }), 2} \widehat{W}_{2}^{T}$ of $X_{\text {Drug }}$, where $\widehat{W}_{2}=\widehat{W}_{\{\text {Drug,Meth }\}}$. The matrix $Z_{\text {Drug, } S_{2}}:=\widehat{U}_{(\text {Drug ), } 2} \widehat{W}_{2}^{T}$ is shown in the top left part of Fig. 2.3. The variables of $X_{\text {Meth }}$ are similarly ordered.

Focusing on the partially-joint scores corresponding to \{Drug, Meth\}, the samples are clustered into two distinct subgroups. These subgroups are shown in Fig. 2.4(a), and are denoted by groups $\alpha$ and $\beta$. There, it can be seen that the variables in $X_{\text {Drug }}$ and $X_{\text {Meth }}$ show a contrasting pattern according to the two subgroups $\alpha$ and $\beta$. Comparing $Z_{\text {Drug, } S_{2}}$ (Fig. 2.4(a)) with the whole $X_{\text {Drug }}$ (Fig. 2.4(b)), we observe that the subgroups identified above are hidden in $X_{\text {Drug. }}$. Moreover, the subgroups $\alpha$ and $\beta$ are well-separated in the partially-joint score $\widehat{W}_{\{\text {Drug,Meth }\}}$ of $Z_{\text {Drug, } S_{2}}$ (Fig. 2.4 (c)), while it is hard to find any subgroup in the principal component scores of whole $X_{\text {Drug }}$ (Fig. 2.4(d)). The same conclusion can be made by inspecting the component of $X_{\text {Meth }}$ corresponding to the
partially-joint score $\widehat{W}_{\{\text {Drug,Meth }\}}$, denoted $Z_{\text {Meth, } S_{2}}$, and the whole $X_{\text {meth }}$ in Fig. 2.4(e) and (f). Thus we observed that PSI gives a more effective measure of finding inherent subgroups in a multiomics data set than a separate application of the principal component analysis on each of the data matrix.

Figure 2.3: The reconstructed components according to the estimated partially-joint structure. The values are
all normalized for each column, then truncated to line on $[-2,2]$.

서울대학교
SEOUL NATONAL LINVERSTY

To find indicators that best explain the subgroups $\alpha$ and $\beta$, we conducted the Fisher exact test simultaneously on 59 gene mutations or chromosome defects of each patients, available as an ancillary information. The p-values from each Fisher exact test were adjusted by the Benjamini-Hochberg (BH) method (Benjamini and Hochberg,1995). The smaller p-values indicate stronger differences of each mutation or chromosome defect between the subgroup $\alpha$ and $\beta$. We found that the immunoglobulin heavy chain variable (IGHV) region mutation status has the most associated relation with the subgroups at BH -adjusted p -value $1.026 \times 10^{-13}$. We also present the $2 \times 2$ table of the IGHV status and the subgroups, see Tables A.4.1 and A.4.2 in the supplementary materials. We postulate IGHV mutation status gives a substantial explanation for the subgrouping of CLL patients, that is, wild type matches to the subgroup $\alpha$ and mutation type to the subgroup $\beta$. Survival analyses on overall survival rates was also conducted, and we found statistically significant differences in survival between the two subgroups $\alpha$ and $\beta$ as shown in Fig. 2.5.

Again in Fig. 2.4 (a), the variables in $Z_{\text {Drug, } S_{2}}$ can be clustered into subgroups [a] and [b] showing a contrasting response pattern to the subgroups $\alpha$ and $\beta$ (variables showing weak responses were excluded as subgroup [c]). The subgroup [a] shows higher viability for $\beta$ (IGHV mutated) than $\alpha$ (IGHV wild type) and vice versa for [b]. Table A.4.3 (in the supplementary materials) presents the list of prominent drugs that have appeared in subgroups [a] and [b] at least 4 times out of 5 concentrations. For the subgroup [a], the table lists a number of inhibitor drugs that
target the B cell receptor (BCR) components, such as Bruton's tyrosine kinase (BTK; spebrutinib, ibrutinib), phosphatidylinositol 3-kinase (PI3K; idelalisib, duvelisib) and spleen tyrosine kinase (STK; tamatinib, PRT062607 HCL). AKT inhibitor(MK-2206) or SRC inhibitors (dasatinib) targets signal transduction pathways that promotes survival and growth of B cell lymphocytes. Unexpected encounter with HSP90 inhibitor (AT13387 or Onalespib) may be related to the stability of lymphocyte-specific SRC family kinases (Mshaik et al.,2021). The appearance of CHK inhibitors (PF 477736, AZD7762, CCT241533) may be linked to repairing mechanisms of DNA damages at G2 phase, known to be associated with WEE1 kinase and the AKT/PKB pathway (Zhang and Hunter,2014). For the subgroup [b], the appearance of mTOR inhibitor (everolimus) may suggest that mTOR pathway and shows different drug sensitivities to the BCR component, despite the fact that it is on the downstream of AKR/PKB pathway. The role of IGHV in this implication requires further investigation. BCL2 inhibitor (navitoclax) and rotenone might be related to the role of mitochondria in apoptosis (Wang and Youle,2014).


Figure 2.4: (a) The matrix $Z_{\operatorname{Drug}, S_{2}}:=\widehat{U}_{\text {(Drug), } 2} \widehat{W}_{2}^{T}$. (b) The whole $X_{\text {Drug }}$ data matrix. (c) The density plot of the subgroups $\alpha$ and $\beta$ along the first principal component (PC) score of $Z_{\text {Drug, } S_{2}} ;(\mathrm{d})$ The PC scores plot for the whole $X_{\text {Drug }}$; (e) The density plot of the subgroups $\alpha$ and $\beta$ along the first principal component of $Z_{\text {Meth, } S_{2}}$; (f) The PC scores plot of the whole $X_{\text {Meth }}$.

## Overall Survival



Figure 2.5: The difference in overall survival between the subgroups $\alpha$ and $\beta$ is displayed on a Kaplan plot with p-value 0.0028 from the log-rank test.

서울대학교
SEOUL NATIONAL LINVERSITY

## Chapter 3

## Penalized Principal Nested Spheres

### 3.1 Introduction

In this section, we review forward nestedness of PCA, the nonEuclidean generalization of PCA to PGA and backward nestedness of PNS. We then present the concept of overfitting phenomenon in PNS and give the motivations of PenPNS.

Nearly for a century, Principal Component Analysis (PCA) (Hotelling, 1933) has been a popular technique in multivariate data analysis. PCA is a dimension reduction method, in that it linearly transforms data points into a lower dimensional linear space with a new coordinate system. More specifically, PCA finds a coordinate, called the first principal component, on which the data points are projected so that the projected points have the largest
variance. PCA next finds another coordinate, the second principal components, on which the data points are projected again and have the largest variance in the complementary space of the first principal component. The third principal components are found in the same manner and so on.

The mechanism described above on which PCA is operating is summarized as the concept forward nestedness. PCA is a stepwise procedure. At the current $m+1$ th step, where $m$ principal components are already identified, $m+1$ th principal component is the best descriptor of the data points projected into the complement of the space that is spanned by the first to m-th principal component. By the nestedness, we describe that the subspace spanned by the principal components is a nested structure, that is,

$$
\operatorname{span}(\mathrm{PC} 1) \subset \operatorname{span}(\mathrm{PC} 1, \mathrm{PC} 2) \subset \operatorname{span}(\mathrm{PC} 1, \mathrm{PC} 2, \mathrm{PC} 3) \subset \ldots,
$$

where $\mathrm{PC} m$ denotes the $m$ th principal component. By the forward, we describe that the nested structure is built on from one dimension to larger step by step.

Our aim is to generalize PCA to a non-Euclidean spaces. There has been several attempts to apply PCA method on manifold surface (Gower,1975; Huckemann and Ziezold,2006; Huckemann et al.,2010; Mardia et al.,2021) and one of the elementary approach is Principal Geodesic Analysis (PGA) (Fletcher et al., 2004). PGA adopts forward nestedness, but with approximating the manifold surface by Euclidean space. The overall generalization framework is as follows.
(1) Given a base point $\mu$ on the manifold $M$, the data points $x_{i} \in M$ on the manifold surface are mapped to the points $u_{i}$ 's
of the tangent space $T_{\mu} M$ (approximation of the manifold surface by the tangent space, which is Euclidean space by definition)
(2) Then in the tangent space $T_{\mu} M$, find the descriptors $v_{k}$ 's that best explains the points $u_{i}$ 's in a manner of forward nestedness.

Specifically, PGA finds the base point $\mu$ as the intrinsic mean of $x_{i}$ 's, that is, a minimizer point of expected squared intrinsic distance (Kobayashi and Nomizu, 1969; Karcher, 1977). The data points $x_{i} \in M$ are mapped to $u_{i}$ by an inverse exponential map, $\operatorname{Exp}_{\mu}^{-1}$. In the tangent space $T_{\mu} M$, PGA performs PCA on points $u_{i}$ 's. Each descriptor $v_{k} \subset T_{\mu} M$ is mapped back to a geodesic through $\mu$ on $M, \operatorname{Exp}_{\mu}\left(v_{k}\right)$, by an exponential map. Thus, we have geodesic descriptors $\operatorname{Exp}_{\mu}\left(v_{k}\right)$ of data points $x_{i} \in M$.

The major pitfall of this framework is that its result depends largely on the choice of the base point $\mu$. The distribution of points $u_{i}$ 's in the tangent space $T_{\mu} M$ varies greatly on the choice of the base point and can lead to way different results in finding descriptos $v_{k}$. Also, PGA's choice of intrinsic mean is somewhat arbitrary. Moreover, there is a counter-example where the geodesic descriptors $\operatorname{Exp}_{\mu}\left(v_{k}\right)$ do not explain the data points $x_{i}$ 's well.

Example 3.1. Let $M=S^{2}$, a sphere in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$. Suppose the data points $x_{i}$ 's are distributed uniformly on the equator. It can be easily shown that both north and south poles are the intrinsic mean $\mu$ of $x_{i}$ 's. Then the geodesic descriptors $\operatorname{Exp}_{\mu}\left(v_{k}\right)$ are longitude lines passing through both north and south poles, but intuitively they are not good descriptors for data points on the equator.

To cope with these difficulties, Analysis of Principal Nested Spheres (PNS) (Jung, 2012) takes a different strategy, backward nestedness. PNS is an analogue of PCA for data points on hypersphere, $S^{d}$. Instead of building up a nested structure from dimension one, PNS starts from $S^{d}$ and reduces dimension one by one. The PNS framework, at the $m$ th step, is
(1) Finds a best-fitting subsphere $A_{d-m}$ of dimension $d-m$ in $S^{d-m+1}$.
(2) Project the points $x_{i} \in S^{d-m+1}$ onto $A_{d-m}$.
(3) As the subsphere $A_{d-m}$ is homeomorphic to $S^{d-m}$, map the points of $A_{d-m}$ to $S^{d-m}$ using an isomorphism $f_{d-m}$.

As a result, PNS yields the following nested structure

$$
S^{d} \supset \mathfrak{A}_{d-1} \cong S^{d-1} \supset \mathfrak{A}_{d-2} \cong S^{d-2} \supset \ldots \supset \mathfrak{A}_{0} \cong S^{0}
$$

where $\mathfrak{A}_{d-1}=A_{d-1}$ and $\mathfrak{A}_{d-m}=f_{d-1}^{-1} \circ \cdots \circ f_{d_{m}}^{-1}\left(A_{d-m}\right)$ for $m=2, \ldots, d$. By adopting backward nestedness, there is no more need to choose a base point and mapping data points to the tangent space. Instead, we only need to estimate the parameters that describe the subsphere. A subsphere is defined by the axis $v \in S^{m}$ and radius $r \in[0, \pi / 2]$ as

$$
A_{m-1}(v, r)=\left\{x \in S^{m}: \arccos \left(v^{T} x\right)=r\right\} .
$$

For more details about the framework of PNS, see Section 3.2,
One of the major characteristics of PNS is that the subsphere is not necessarily a great sphere. Here a great sphere means a subsphere with radius $r=\pi / 2$ and it is a high-dimensional analogue


Figure 3.1: (a) Data points generated along a small sphere with $r=$ $\pi / 4$. (b) Data points generated along a great sphere (the equator), but inside a short interval of $10^{\circ}$ (perturbed by von Mises-Fisher distribution with $\kappa=50$ ). Blue circle is the fitted small sphere by PNS.
of a geodesic circle of $S^{2}$. Permitting a small sphere $(r<\pi / 2)$ gives PNS more flexibility in fitting a certain type of non-geodesic variation on a hypersphere. For example, if data points are distributed along a circle which is posited on latitude $45^{\circ}$ of $S^{2}$, it is reasonable to fit the data points with a small sphere with parameters $v=(0,0,1)^{T}$ and $r=\pi / 4$, see Figure 3.1a.

However, at the same time, permitting a small sphere can induce a somewhat pathological phenomenon, called overfitting phenomenon. Overfitting phenomenon in PNS indicates a situation where the fitted radius is less than $\pi / 2$ even if data points are generated along a great subsphere. In this chapter, we discuss two types of overfitting phenomenon in PNS.

Type 1 Overfitting Phenomenon: When data points are generated along a great sphere, the angle between the true axis and data point would make a distribution around $\pi / 2$. However, when the estimated radius $\widehat{r}$ is over $\pi / 2$, the estimated axis $\widehat{v}$ is flipped to $-\widehat{v}$ and we take the estimated radius $\pi-\widehat{r}$, since radius as a parameter ranges from 0 to $\pi / 2$ (For example, if the parameters are yielded as $\left((0,0,1)^{T}, \pi / 2+0.01\right)$, then we take $(\widehat{v}, \widehat{r})=\left((0,0,1)^{T}, \pi / 2-0.01\right)$ instead $)$. Hence, the distribution of the estimated radius is a folded version of the distribution of the angle between the true axis and the data points. As a result, the expectation of estimated radius, $\mathbb{E} \widehat{r}$ is underestimated even if the true radius is $\pi / 2$.

Type 2 Overfitting Phenomenon: Suppose data points are generated along a great subsphere but within a very short interval. This would make the point cloud have a disc shape. In this case, subsphere fitting would yield a small subsphere inside the point cloud, not the original great subsphere where data points were generated, see Figure 3.1b.

To mitigate overfitting phenomena, we propose Penalized Principal Nested Spheres (PenPNS). First, PenPNS alleviate type 1 overfitting phenomenon by regularizing $r$ in parameter estimation. Well-known regularization, like penalizing with $L_{1}, L_{2}$ or MCP terms, are examined in simulation studies. Second, to deal with type 2 overfitting phenomenon, PenPNS imposes a penalizing
term on the cross-validation error in choosing tuning parameter. This penalizing term is derived from a concept Index of Dispersion ( IoD ), an index which has a large value when a disc-shaped distribution is fitted with a small radius.

The rest of this chapter is organized as follows. In Section 3.2, we formally review the nested subsphere structure of PNS and present the PenPNS framework. The computational algorithm and validation method are explained in Section 3.3. In Section 3.4, the geometry of parameter space is described and conditions to guarantee strong consistency are discussed. In Section 3.5, we present a heuristic method to avoid type 2 overfitting phenomenon. The concepts of IoD and IoD criterion are defined therein. In Section 3.6. the results of numerical simulation are presented, mainly focused on the mitigation of overfitting phenomena. In Section 3.7, we compare the result of the proposed PenPNS with the original PNS and PNGS (Jung,2012) on the Cephalometric X-ray Image Data. Proofs, technical lemmas and extended numerical results are given in Chapter 3 of the supplementary materials.

### 3.2 Statistical Framework

### 3.2.1 Nested Subsphere Structure

In this section, we present the concept of the nested subsphere structure, proposed in Jung (2012). Given a natural number $m$ and the unit sphere $S^{m}$ in $\mathbb{R}^{m+1}$, a subsphere $A_{m-1}(v, r)$ of $S^{m}$ is defined with a unit vector $v \in S^{m}$, called an axis, and a radius $r \in[0, \pi / 2]$.

Definition 3.1. When $m>1$, a subsphere $A_{m-1}(v, r)$ of $S^{m}$ with an axis $v \in S^{m}$ and a radius $r \in[0, \pi / 2]$ is defined

$$
A_{m-1}(v, r)=\left\{x \in S^{m}: \rho_{m-1}(v, x)=r\right\}
$$

where $\rho_{m-1}(x, y)=\arccos \left(x^{T} y\right)$ denotes the geodesic distance between $x, y \in S^{m}$. When $m=1$, a subsphere $A_{0}$ is a point on a unit circle $S^{1}$.

Note that a subsphere $A_{m-1}(v, r)$ is the intersection of $S^{m}$ with a $m$-dimensional affine subspace in $\mathbb{R}^{m+1}$, denoted $H_{m}(v, r)=$ $\left\{x \in \mathbb{R}^{m+1}: v^{T} x-\cos r=0\right\}$. The projection from $S^{m}$ onto $A_{m-1}(v, r)$ is defined as
$\pi_{m-1}(v, r)(x)=\underset{s \in A_{m-1}(v, r)}{\arg \min } \rho_{m-1}(x, s)=\frac{\sin r \cdot x+\sin \left(\rho_{m-1}(x, v)-r\right) v}{\sin \left(\rho_{m-1}(x, v)\right)}$
for $x \in S^{m}$ and $m \geq 2$.
We observe that there is an isomorphism between $A_{m-1}(v, r)$ and $S^{m-1}$, given as $f_{m-1}(v, r): A_{m-1}(v, r) \rightarrow S^{m-1}$ such that

$$
f_{m-1}(v, r)(x)=R^{-}(v) x / \sin r
$$

which has an inverse $f_{m-1}^{-1}(v, r): S^{m-1} \rightarrow A_{m-1}(v, r)$ such that

$$
f_{m-1}^{-1}(v, r)(y)=R^{T}(v)\left(\sin r \cdot y^{T} \quad \cos r\right)^{T}
$$

Here, $R(v) \in \mathbb{R}^{(m+1) \times(m+1)}$ is a rotation mapping that moves $v$ to the north pole and $R^{-}(v)$ consists of the first $m$ rows of $R(v)$. By $f_{m-1}$ and $f_{m-1}^{-1}, A_{m-1}(v, r)$ is identified with a unit sphere $S^{m-1}$.

Let $d$ be a natural number and consider a family of subspheres $A_{m-1}\left(v_{m-1}, r_{m-1}\right)$ in $S^{m}$ for each $m=1, \ldots, d$. A nested sphere $\mathfrak{A}_{m-1}$ corresponding to $A_{m-1}\left(v_{m-1}, r_{m-1}\right)$ is defined in $S^{d}$ as follows.

Definition 3.2. Suppose $d$ is a natural number and there is a family of subspheres $A_{m-1}\left(v_{m-1}, r_{m-1}\right)$ with axis $v_{m-1} \in S^{m}$ and radius $r_{m-1} \in[0, \pi / 2]$ for each $m=1, \ldots, d$. The projection from $S^{m}$ onto $A_{m-1}\left(v_{m-1}, r_{m-1}\right)$ is denoted $\pi_{m-1}$. A m-dimensional nested sphere $\mathfrak{A}_{m-1}$ of $S^{d}$ is defined as
(1) if $m=d, \mathfrak{A}_{d-1}=A_{d-1}\left(v_{d-1}, r_{d-1}\right)$,
(2) if $1 \leq m<d, \mathfrak{A}_{m-1}=f_{d-1}^{-1} \circ \cdots \circ f_{m-1}^{-1}\left(A_{m-1}\left(v_{m-1}, r_{m-1}\right)\right)$, where $f_{m-1}^{-1}=f_{m-1}^{-1}\left(v_{m-1}, r_{m-1}\right)$ for each $m=1, \ldots, d$. Then the nested subsphere structure $\mathfrak{A}$ is defined $\mathfrak{A}=\left\{\mathfrak{A}_{0}, \ldots, \mathfrak{A}_{d-1}\right\}$.

### 3.2.2 Estimation of Subspheres

For $d \geq 2$, suppose $n$ data points $x_{1}^{(1)}, \ldots, x_{n}^{(1)} \in S^{d}$ are sampled. Our goal is to fit subspheres $\widehat{A}_{d-k}$ for $k=1, \ldots, d$ sequentially. At each step $k=1, \ldots, d-1$, the estimated subsphere $\widehat{A}_{d-k}$ is obtained by estimating its parameters $v_{d-k}$ and $r_{d-k}$, that is, $\widehat{A}_{d-k}=A_{d-k}\left(\widehat{v}_{d-k}, \widehat{r}_{d-k}\right)$. After fitting $\widehat{A}_{d-k}$, we update data points as $x_{i}^{(k+1)}=f_{d-k}(\widehat{v}, \widehat{r}) \circ \pi_{d-k}(\widehat{v}, \widehat{r})\left(x_{i}^{(k)}\right)$ for all $i=1, \ldots, n$, so that the new data points reside on $S^{d-k}$.

For each step $1 \leq k<d$, we seek to minimize the objective function

$$
\begin{equation*}
F(v, r)=\frac{1}{2 n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} L\left(x_{i}^{(k)} ; v, r\right)+j_{\tau_{k}}(r) \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

over $(v, r) \in S^{d-k+1} \times[0, \pi / 2]$. Here, $L(x ; v, r)$ is a loss function that measures a discrepancy between a subsphere $A_{d-k}(v, r)$ and a data point $x \in S^{d-k+1}$. The function $j_{\tau_{k}}$ introduces the form of penalization, where the value of $j_{\tau_{k}}$ is larger for the smaller
value of the radius $r$. The tuning parameter $\tau_{k} \in[0, \infty)$ controls the degree of penalization. The choice of loss function and penalty function is presented in the subsections below.

At the last step $k=d$, we compute $\widehat{A}_{0}$ as the Fréchet mean of $x_{1}^{(d)}, \ldots, x_{n}^{(d)} \in S^{1}$, that is,

$$
\widehat{A}_{0}=\underset{s \in S^{1}}{\arg \min } \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(x_{i}, s\right)
$$

The loss function corresponding to the original PNS proposal (Jung, 2012) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{I}(x ; v, r)=\left(\rho_{m-1}(x, v)-r\right)^{2}=\left(\arccos \left(x^{T} v\right)-r\right)^{2} \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

which may be called the intrinsic squared loss function. For PenPNS, we follow the instrinsic squared loss as the original PNS.

We use the penalty function $j_{\tau_{k}}$ in order to penalize the departure from great sphere $(r=\pi / 2)$ by assigning large value for smaller $r$. For the intrinsic loss functions, (3.2), we set the penalty function in the forms of $L_{1}$ and $L_{2}$ norms,

$$
\begin{align*}
& j_{\tau}^{L_{1}}(r)=\tau \cdot|\pi / 2-r|,  \tag{3.3}\\
& j_{\tau}^{L_{2}}(r)=\tau \cdot(\pi / 2-r)^{2}, \tag{3.4}
\end{align*}
$$

and also use the MCP (Zhang, 2010)

$$
j_{\tau}^{M C P}(r)= \begin{cases}\tau \cdot(\pi / 2-r)-(\pi / 2-r)^{2} / 2 \gamma, & \text { if }(\pi / 2-r) \leq \gamma \tau  \tag{3.5}\\ \gamma \tau^{2} / 2, & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

with a constant $\gamma>1$.

### 3.3 Computational Algorithms

A general strategy of solving (1) is an alternating minimization method. Given a current iterate $\left(v^{0}, r^{0}\right)$, we first optimize over $v$ with the fixed $r^{0}$, obtaining $v^{1}$ satisfying $F\left(v^{1}, r^{0}\right) \leq F\left(v^{0}, r^{0}\right)$. Then we obtain $r^{1}$ from given $v^{1}$, satisfying $F\left(v^{1}, r^{1}\right) \leq F\left(v^{1}, r^{0}\right)$.

The algorithm for minimization of $F$ with respect to $v$ is discussed in Section 3.3.1. Given $v$, the problem of minimizing $F$ in terms of $r$ has a closed form solution with appropriate $L_{1}, L_{2}$ or MCP penalties, as discussed in Section 3.3.2. We propose to optimize $F(v, r)$ as follows. For the $j$ th iterate $\left(v^{j}, r^{j}\right)$,

1. Obtain $v^{j+1}$ satisfying $F\left(v^{j}, r^{j+1}\right) \leq F\left(v^{j}, r^{j}\right)$ (Section 3.3.1).
2. Obtain $r^{j+1}$ satisfying $F\left(v^{j+1}, r^{j+1}\right) \leq F\left(v^{j}, r^{j+1}\right)$ (Section 3.3.2.
3. Stop if $F\left(v^{j}, r^{j}\right)-F\left(v^{j+1}, r^{j+1}\right)<\epsilon$ for a predetermined threshold $\epsilon>0$. Otherwise, return to the $j+1$ th step.

### 3.3.1 Update of $v$

The current axis $v^{j}$ is updated by solving the following nonlinear least-squares problem,

$$
v^{j+1}=\underset{v \in S^{d-k+1}}{\arg \min } \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(\rho_{d-k}\left(x_{i}^{(k)}, v^{j}\right)-r^{j}\right)^{2},
$$

numerically, e.g. Levenberg-Marquardt Algorithm (Levenberg,1944; Marquardt,1963).

### 3.3.2 Update of $r$

Suppose we have datasets $x_{i}^{(k)} \in S^{m-k+1}$ for $i=1, \ldots, n$. It is easy to check that the solution to

$$
r^{j+1}=\underset{r \in \mathbb{R}}{\arg \min } \frac{1}{2 n} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(\rho_{m-1}\left(x_{i}^{(k)}, v^{j+1}\right)-r\right)^{2}+j_{\tau}(r),
$$

is given as (1) for $L_{1}$ penalty, $r^{j+1}=\pi / 2-\operatorname{sign}(\pi / 2-\bar{a})(\mid \pi / 2-$ $\bar{a} \mid-\tau)_{+}$and (2) for $L_{2}$ penalty, $r^{j+1}=(\bar{a}+\tau \pi / 2) /(1+\tau)$ and $(3)$ for the MCP,
$r^{j+1}=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}\bar{a}, & \text { if }|\pi / 2-\bar{a}|>\gamma \tau \\ \frac{\pi}{2}-\frac{\gamma}{\gamma-1} \operatorname{sign}(\pi / 2-\bar{a})(|\pi / 2-\bar{a}|-\tau)_{+}, & \text {otherwise }\end{array}\right.$,
where $\bar{a}=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \arccos \left(v^{T} x_{i}^{(k)}\right)$. Here, for $a \in \mathbb{R}, a_{+}=a$ if $a \geq 0$ and $a_{+}=0$ if $a<0$.

Remark 3.1. In particular, using the $L_{1}$ penalty and the $M C P$, i.e., $j_{\tau}^{L_{1}}(\pi / 2-r)$ and $j_{\tau}^{M C P}(\pi / 2-r)$, will ensure that the updated radius $r^{j+1}$ is $\pi / 2$ for large enough $\tau$.

Remark 3.2. In the original PNS, $r^{j+1}=\bar{a}$.

### 3.3.3 Tuning Parameter Selection

For every steps $k=1, \ldots, d$, We use the cross-validation method to select the value of tuning parameter $\tau_{k} \in[0, \infty)$. Let the number of cross-validation be $B$. For the $b$ th instance of the crossvalidation with $b=1, \ldots, B$, we split the $n$ data points $X^{(k)}=$ $\left\{x_{1}^{(k)}, \ldots, x_{n}^{(k)}\right\}$ into two disjoint sets, the training set $X_{t r, b}^{(k)}$ of size $\lfloor(B-1) / B \cdot n\rfloor$ and the test set $X_{\text {test }, b}^{(k)}=\left\{x_{1, \text { test }, b}^{(k)}, \ldots, x_{n^{\prime}, \text { test }, b}^{(k)}\right\}$ of
size $n^{\prime}=\lceil 1 / B \cdot n\rceil$. Given $X_{t r, b}^{(k)}$ and a grid of $\tau_{k}$ 's, we solve the optimization problem (3.1) for each $\tau_{k}$ and the estimated parameters are denoted $\widehat{v}_{t r, b}\left(\tau_{k}\right)$ and $\widehat{r}_{t r, b}\left(\tau_{k}\right)$.

To evaluate the accuracy of the prediction, we estimate the prediction error for each $\tau_{k}$ by the cross-validation error,

$$
\widehat{\operatorname{Err}}_{k}\left(\tau_{k}\right)=\frac{1}{B} \sum_{b=1}^{B} \frac{1}{n^{\prime}} \sum_{i=1}^{n^{\prime}} L\left(x_{i, t e s t, b}^{(k)} ; \widehat{v}_{t r, b}\left(\tau_{k}\right), \widehat{r}_{t r, b}\left(\tau_{k}\right)\right)
$$

where $L(x ; v, t)$ is a loss function. The best tuning parameter $\widehat{\tau}_{b e s t, k}$ is the one that minimizes $\widehat{\operatorname{Err}}_{k}$ over the interval $\tau_{k} \in[0, \infty)$. Finally, we refit the model on the full data $X^{(k)}$ with $\widehat{\tau}_{\text {best }, k}$ and the estimated parameters are denote $\widehat{v}_{k, b e s t}$ and $\widehat{r}_{k, b e s t}$.

### 3.4 Theory

We consider $X$ to be a $S^{m}$-valued random variable, which is a measurable mapping from a probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, \mathcal{P})$ into $\left(S^{m}, \mathcal{G}\right)$, where $\mathcal{G}$ denotes the Borel $\sigma$-algebra of $S^{m}$. Let $X_{1}, \ldots, X_{n}$ be random variables generated identically and independently from the same law as $X$.

### 3.4.1 Geometry of Parameter Space

In this section, let a small subsphere $p(v, r)$ on $S^{m}$ for $m \geq 2$ be parameterized with a pair of a center and a radius $(v, r) \in \Theta_{0}=$ $S^{m} \times[0, \pi / 2]$, or explicitly

$$
p(v, r)=\left\{x \in S^{m}: \rho(v, x)=r\right\},
$$

where $\rho(x, y)=\arccos \left(x^{T} y\right)$ denotes the geodesic distance between $x, y \in S^{m}$.

However, when $r=\pi / 2$, two small subspheres $p(v, \pi / 2)$ and $p(-v, \pi / 2)$ represent the same small sphere. To remedy this, we define an equivalence relation $\sim$ that identifies $p(v, r)$ with $p(-v, r)$ whenever $r=\pi / 2$. The parameter space $\Theta$ is defined as $\Theta=$ $\Theta_{0} / \sim$, that is, $\Theta=\left\{[v, r]:(v, r) \in \Theta_{0}\right\}$. Note that both $\Theta_{0}$ and $\Theta$ are compact spaces.

A distance between $p_{1}=\left[v_{1}, r_{1}\right]$ and $p_{2}=\left[v_{2}, r_{2}\right] \in \Theta$ is defined as

$$
d\left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right)=\min \left(d_{1}\left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right), d_{2}\left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right)\right)
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& d_{1}\left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right)=\left(\arccos \left(v_{1}^{T} v_{2}\right)^{2}+\left|r_{1}-r_{2}\right|^{2}\right)^{1 / 2} \\
& d_{2}\left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right)=\left(\arccos \left(-v_{1}^{T} v_{2}\right)^{2}+\left|\pi-r_{1}-r_{2}\right|^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Lemma 3.1. The distance $d$ is a metric.
For a pair of parameters $p=[v, r] \in \Theta$, the projection from $S^{m}$ onto $p_{0}(v, r)$ is defined as

$$
\pi(p)(x)=\underset{s \in p(v, r)}{\arg \min } \rho(x, s)=\frac{\sin r \cdot x+\sin (\rho(x, v)-r) v}{\sin (\rho(x, v))}
$$

for $x \in S^{m}$. Abusing the notation, we denote $\rho(x, p)=\inf _{s \in p(v, r)} \rho(x, s)$ with $p \in \Theta$. Since $\rho$ is continuous and $S^{m}$ is compact, uniform continuity holds for $\rho$, that is, for every $x \in S^{m}, p \in \Theta$ and $\epsilon>0$, there exists a $\delta>0$ such that $\left|\rho\left(x, p^{\prime}\right)-\rho(x, p)\right|<\epsilon$ for all $p^{\prime} \in \Theta$ with $d\left(p, p^{\prime}\right)<\delta$.

### 3.4.2 Strong Consistency

We discuss a consistency of the subsphere estimator $\widehat{p}=p(\widehat{v}, \widehat{r}) \in$ $\Theta$ for $X_{1}, \ldots, X_{n}$ on $S^{m}$, where the model is equipped with a
penalty. Our aim is to show the strong consistency with respect to the distance $d$, where $\widehat{p}$ is obtained by solving the minimization of a penalized likelihood function

$$
\min _{p \in \Theta} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho^{2}\left(X_{i}, p\right)+j_{\tau}(r),
$$

where $j_{\tau}:[0, \pi / 2] \rightarrow[0, \infty)$ is a function with the following properties.
(P1) $j_{\tau}(x)$ is decreasing on $x \in[0, \pi / 2]$
(P2) $j_{\tau}(\pi / 2)=0$ and $j_{\tau}(x)$ is left continuous as $x \rightarrow \pi / 2$.
(P3) $j_{\tau}(x)$ is continuous in $x \in[0, \pi / 2)$
(P4) $j_{\tau}(x) \rightarrow 0$ monotonically as $j \rightarrow 0$ for all $x \in[0, \pi / 2]$

Example 3.2. Penalties in (3.3), (3.4) and (3.5), that is, $L_{1}, L_{2}$, and MCP penalties, satisfy (P1) - (P4).

In Bhattacharya and Patrangenaru (2003) and Huckemann (2011), the population and sample Fréchet $\rho$-mean set for the unpenalized likelihood are suggested by as

$$
E=\left\{p \in \Theta: \mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, p)=\inf _{q \in \Theta} \mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, q)\right\}
$$

and

$$
E_{n}=\left\{p \in \Theta: \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho^{2}\left(X_{i}, p\right)=\inf _{q \in \Theta} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho^{2}\left(X_{i}, q\right)\right\}
$$

For the penalized function with a penalty $j_{\tau}$, we define the population solution set as

$$
E^{\tau}=\left\{p=[v, r] \in \Theta: \mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, p)+j_{\tau}(r)=\inf _{q=\left[v^{\prime}, r^{\prime}\right] \in \Theta} \mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, q)+j_{\tau}\left(r^{\prime}\right)\right\}
$$

and the sample solution set as

$$
E_{n}^{\tau}=\left\{p=[v, r] \in \Theta: \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho^{2}\left(X_{i}, p\right)+j_{\tau}(r)=\inf _{q=\left[v^{\prime}, r^{\prime}\right] \in \Theta} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho^{2}\left(X_{i}, q\right)+j_{\tau}\left(r^{\prime}\right)\right\}
$$

Next, we introduce the following modes of convergence (Schotz,2022).
Definition 3.3. Let $(\Theta, d)$ be a metric space. For a sequence of sets $E_{n} \subset \Theta$ for $n=1,2, \ldots$, the outer limit of $E_{n}$ is

$$
\cap_{n=1}^{\infty} \overline{\cup_{k=n}^{\infty} E_{k}}
$$

The one-sided Hausdorff distance between two sets $E_{1}$ and $E_{2}$ in $(\Theta, d)$ is defined as

$$
d_{H}\left(E_{1}, E_{2}\right)=\sup _{x_{1} \in E_{1}} \inf _{x_{2} \in E_{2}} d\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)
$$

Strong consistency of random closed sets, on the ground of two modes of convergence above, were developed by Ziezold (1977) and Bhattacharya and Patrangenaru (2003) as follows.

Definition 3.4. Let $(\Theta, d)$ a metric space. For a random closed set $E \subset \Theta$ and a sequence of random closed sets $E_{n} \subset \Theta$ for $n=1,2, \ldots$,
$(Z C) E_{n}$ converges to $E$ strongly in the sense of Ziezold (1977) if

$$
\cap_{n=1}^{\infty} \overline{\cup_{k=n}^{\infty} E_{k}} \subset E \quad \text { a.s. }
$$

( $\boldsymbol{B P C} \boldsymbol{C}) E_{n}$ converges to $E$ strongly in the sense of Bhattacharya (2003) if for every $\epsilon>0$, there is a sufficiently large $n>0$ such that

$$
\cup_{k=n}^{\infty} E_{k} \subset\{p \in \Theta: \exists q \in E \text { s.t. } d(p, q) \leq \epsilon\} \quad \text { a.s. }
$$

$(\mathrm{ZC})$ and (BPC) are indeed random closed set version of convergence in outer limit or one-sided Hausdorff distance respectively. Under the condition that $\Theta$ is compact, (ZC) and (BPC) imply each other.

Proposition 3.1. Let $(\Theta, d)$ be a metric space with $\Theta$ compact. Consider a random closed set $E$ and a sequence of random closed sets $E_{n}$ for $n=1,2, \ldots E_{n}$ converges to $E$ in the sense of $(Z C)$ if and only if $E_{n}$ converges to $E$ in the sense of (BPC).

We now prove the strong consistency of the sample solution sets $E_{n}^{\tau}$, extending the discussions in Huckemann (2011). First, we assert the strong consistency (ZC) for a given tuning parameter $\tau \geq 0$.

Theorem 3.1. For a given tuning parameter $\tau \geq 0, E_{n}^{\tau}$ converges to $E^{\tau}$ in the sense of $(Z C)$ if the penalty function $j_{\tau}$ satisfies (P1) to (P3).

The sets $E^{\tau}$ are deterministic and for any decreasing sequences $\tau_{k} \rightarrow 0, E^{\tau_{k}}$ converges to $E$ in outer limit.

Theorem 3.2. Let $\tau_{k} \rightarrow 0$ be any decreasing sequences. Then $E^{\tau_{k}}$ converges to $E$ in outer limit if the penalty function $j_{\tau}$ satisfies (P4).

Or we can show the consistency of $E_{n}^{\tau}$ by setting $\tau_{n} \rightarrow 0$ as $n$ goes to infinity.

Theorem 3.3. Let $\tau_{n}$ be a decreasing sequence as $n \rightarrow 0$. Then $E_{n}^{\tau}$ converges to $E^{\tau}$ in the sense of $(Z C)$ with respect to $d$ in $\Theta$ if the penalty function $p_{\tau}$ satisfies (P1) to (P4).


Figure 3.2: A small sphere estimator and a great sphere estimator on a disc-shaped distribution (left) and a doughnut-shaped distribution (right).

We provide proofs of theorems in this section and examples for relative independence and absolute orthogonality in Section B. 1 of the supplementary materials.

### 3.5 IoD Criterion to Avoid Overfitting

Type 2 overfitting phenomenon usually occurs when data points are generated along a great subsphere but within a very short interval. To emulate this case, we assume that the data points follow a highly concentrated unimodal distribution, what we call a disc-shaped distribution. This disc-shaped distribution is a counterpart of a doughnut-shaped distribution, where the distribution is highly concentrating along a small sphere mode, like a doughnut shape. Small sphere estimator resides inside the disc-shaped cloud of data points and its radius is unnecessarily small but with much lower variance, see Figure 3.2 .

For more practical interpretability, our aim is to estimate this
type of data with a great circle estimator. For that, we propose a concept of Index of Dispersion (IoD), an index which reflects how much data points are congested in a small area. If the data point cloud has a disc shape, IoD will have a high value. In contrast, if the data point cloud has a doughnut shape, IoD will have a low value. We utlize IoD in tuning parameter selection, where the radius of small sphere estimator varies as the tuning parameter $\tau$ does. By penalizing cross-validation errors with IoD value, we avoid estimate a disc-shaped distribution with a small subsphere with a small radius.

### 3.5.1 Index of Dispersion (IoD) and IoD Criterion

We first define the index of dispersion ( IoD ) with respect to a direction $v$ for a distribution on the sphere $S^{m}$.

Definition 3.5. Suppose a random variable $X$ has a distribution $\nu$ on $S^{m}$. Given a vector $v \in S^{m}$, the angle between $v$ and $X$ is denoted as $\theta_{v}=\arccos \left(v^{T} X\right)$. The first and second moments of $\theta_{v}$ are given as

$$
\mu_{1}=\int_{S^{m}} \theta_{v} d \nu(X), \quad \mu_{2}=\int_{S^{m}} \theta_{v}^{2} d \nu(X)
$$

Then the index of dispersion (IoD) with respect to a direction $v$ is defined as

$$
I o D(v)=\left(\frac{\mu_{2}-\mu_{1}^{2}}{\mu_{1}}\right)^{2}
$$

Remark 3.3. Our concept of $I o D$ is inspired from the original version of IoD from Cox (1966), which has a form $\sigma^{2} / \mu$, thus it is indeed correct to call our version as squared IoD. Bur for
convenience in naming, we will allow a slight misnomer for this concept in our thesis.

For a highly concentrated unimodal (disc-shaped) distribution around $v \in S^{m}, \operatorname{IoD}(v)$ tends to be large since density gathers in a small area on the sphere, and therefore the mean value of $\theta_{v}$ is small. In contrast, when density is highly concentrated along a small or great circle (doughnut-shaped) and $v$ coincides with the center of the circle, the mean value of $\theta_{v}$ grows larger and the value of $\operatorname{IoD}(v)$ decreases as much.

The sample version of the IoD is defined in view of the penalized PNS estimates.

Definition 3.6. Given a small circle estimator $A(\widehat{v}(\tau), \widehat{r}(\tau))$ from the penalized PNS, we compute the azimuthal angles $\left\{\theta_{v, i}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ from the dataset $\left\{x_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{n}$ such that $\theta_{v, i}=\arccos \left(\widehat{v}(\tau)^{T} x_{i}\right)$. Then the sample version of IoD with respect to $\widehat{v}(\tau)$ is defined as

$$
\widehat{I o D}(\widehat{v}(\tau))=\left(\frac{\sum_{i=1}^{n} \theta_{v, i}^{2} / n-\left(\sum_{i=1}^{n} \theta_{v, i} / n\right)^{2}}{\sum_{i=1}^{n} \theta_{v, i} / n}\right)^{2}
$$

From now on we denote $\widehat{I o D}(\widehat{v}(\tau))$ as $\widehat{I o D}(\tau)$.
When $\tau$ goes down, say $\tau_{s}$, the small circle estimator has a smaller radius and $\widehat{v}$ tends to approach to the cloud of data points. Thus, in this case, the small circle estimator should have a larger sample IoD, $\widehat{\mathrm{IoD}}\left(\tau_{s}\right)$. In contrast, when $\tau$ becomes bigger, say $\tau_{l}$, the small circle tends to have a larger radius and the axis gets further from the cloud of data points. In this case, the small circle estimator has a smaller sample $\operatorname{IoD}, \widehat{\operatorname{IoD}}\left(\tau_{l}\right)$, that is, $\widehat{\operatorname{IoD}}\left(\tau_{l}\right)<$ $\widehat{\mathrm{IoD}}\left(\tau_{s}\right)$.

Our strategy is, in order to compensate the overfitting phenomenon in PNS, to add an compensating IoD to the validation error.

For that, we first suggest a concept of a criterion by adding an IoD term to the empirical risk,

$$
\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} L\left(x_{i} ; \widehat{v}(\tau), \widehat{r}(\tau)\right)
$$

given each value of tuning parameter $\tau_{k}$. Given data points, we define a criterion for the small sphere estimator by penalizing the empirical risk as follows.

Definition 3.7. Given a dataset $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ on $S^{m}$ and a small sphere estimator $A(\widehat{v}(\tau), \widehat{r}(\tau))$ from the penalized PNS, we define the IoD criterion $\widehat{I C}_{C}$ with a constant $C>0$

$$
\widehat{I C}_{C}(\tau)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} L\left(x_{i} ; \widehat{v}(\tau), \widehat{r}(\tau)\right)+C \cdot \widehat{I o D}(\tau)
$$

In tuning parameter selection, we derive the IoD criterion $\widehat{\mathrm{IC}}_{C,(b)}(\tau)$ for each test set $X_{t e s t, b}$ with $b=1, \ldots, B$

$$
\widehat{\mathrm{IC}}_{C,(b)}(\tau)=\frac{1}{n^{\prime}} \sum_{i=1}^{n^{\prime}} L\left(x_{i, t e s t, b} ; \widehat{v}_{t r, b}(\tau), \widehat{r}_{t r, b}(\tau)\right)+C \cdot \widehat{\mathrm{IoD}}_{(b)}(\tau),
$$

where $\widehat{\operatorname{IoD}}_{(b)}(\tau)$ is obtained from the test set $X_{\text {test }, b}$. The IoD criteria are aggregated to $\widehat{\mathrm{IC}}_{\text {test }, C}(\tau)=1 / B \cdot \sum_{b=1}^{B} \widehat{\mathrm{IC}}_{C,(b)}(\tau)$ and we select the best tuning parameter $\tau_{\text {best }, C}$ that minimizes $\widehat{\mathrm{IC}}_{\text {test }, C}$.

### 3.5.2 Choice of the Constant $C$

The major issue here is the choice of the constant $C$. We assume a situation in the population setting, where we estimate a data point
cloud with two representing cases, a small sphere estimator and a great sphere estimator. We determine the value of the constant $C$ such that the IoD term compensates the difference of risks between small and great sphere estimators.

To put it formally, we first define IoD criterion in the population setting, by adding an IoD term to the risk, $\mathbb{E} L(X ; v, r)$, as follows.

Definition 3.8. Suppose we have a random variable $X \in S^{m}$. Given a small circle $A(v, r)$, which is independent from $X$, we define a IoD criterion for $X$ and $A(v, r)$

$$
I C_{C}(v, r)=\mathbb{E} L(X ; v, r)+C \cdot I o D(v)
$$

with some constant $C>0$.

We adopt a heuristic method to choose the value of $C$, whose brief overview is as follows.

We consider a disc-shaped distribution scenario. For each cases, we suppose generic situations where the distribution is estimated with small or great sphere estimator. Then the variance and IoD of two estimators are computed and we find the range of $C$ where the overfitting phenomenon is mitigated.

We denote the parameters for a small sphere estimator as $\left(v_{\text {small }}, r_{\text {small }}\right)$ and the ones for a great sphere estimator as $\left(v_{\text {great }}, r_{\text {great }}\right)$. Then, our aim is to find a constant $C$ such that type 2 overfitting phenomenon is mitigated for disc-shaped distribution, that is, IoD criterion is bigger for small sphere estimator than great sphere estimator. Our aim is summarized as follows.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{IC}_{C}\left(v_{\text {small }}, r_{\text {small }}\right)>\mathrm{IC}_{C}\left(v_{\text {great }}, r_{\text {great }}\right) . \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

For notations, suppose $X \in S^{m}$ follows a disc or doughnutshaped distribution with a pole $\mu$. Let $v_{s}$ and $v_{g}$ be the center of the small and great sphere estimator for $X$. Let $\theta_{g}=\arccos \left(v_{g}^{T} X\right)$, $\theta_{s}=\arccos \left(v_{s}^{T} X\right)$ and $\theta_{\mu}=\arccos \left(\mu^{T} X\right)$.

## Disc-shaped distribution

We call a high concentrated unimodal distribution with a mode $\mu$ as a disc-shaped distribution on the sphere $S^{m}$ with a pole $\mu$. We consider a disc-shaped distribution invariant to the rotation around $\mu$ and whose support is a convex subset of $S^{m}$ that includes $\mu$, which is not a point density on $\mu$ nor uniform density on the whole surface of $S^{m}$.

For a disc-shaped distribution, we set a small sphere estimator concentric to $X$, that is, $\theta_{s}=\theta_{\mu}$ and its radius coincides with $\mathbb{E} \theta_{s}$. In contrast, we set a great sphere estimator to pass across the density through $\mu$. Then the center of the great sphere $v$ makes a perpendicular angle with the pole $\mu, \mathbb{E} \theta_{g}=\pi / 2$, see Figure 3.2 left. The small sphere estimation represents the overfitting phenomenon.

Note that the risk of the small sphere estimator, $\mathbb{E} L\left(X ; v_{s}, r_{s}\right)$ is the same as the variance of $\theta_{s}$. It is the same for the great sphere estimator, that is, $\mathbb{E} L\left(X ; v_{g}, r_{g}\right)=\operatorname{Var}\left(\theta_{g}\right)$.

To satisfy (3.6), we require $C$ should be large than the division of the variance difference by the IoD difference, that is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
C>\left(\operatorname{Var}\left(\theta_{g}\right)-\operatorname{Var}\left(\theta_{s}\right)\right) /\left(\operatorname{IoD}\left(v_{s}\right)-\operatorname{IoD}\left(v_{g}\right)\right), \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that the IoD criterion $\left(\mathrm{IC}_{C}\right)$ of the small sphere estimator is larger than that of the great sphere estimator.

In practice, we set $C$ as two times the RHS value of (3.7). The determination of $C$ depends on the distribution of data points.

In the following examples, we choose the value of $C$ for discshape distributions. For convenience, we use $p=m+1$ to follow the notational convention $S^{p-1}=S^{m}$.

Example 3.3. We first consider the spherical $\tau$-ball uniform distribution, $\mathcal{S}_{\tau}$, for some small $\tau>0$. The sectional function of $\mathcal{S}_{\tau}$ is

$$
g_{S_{\tau}}\left(\theta_{1}\right)=c(p, \tau) \mathbf{1}_{\left(\theta_{1}<\tau\right)}
$$

where $c(p, \tau)$ is the normalizing term. Using the following approximation formula
$\int_{0}^{\tau} x^{q} \sin ^{p} x d x=\frac{1}{p+q+1} \tau^{p+q+1}-\frac{1}{6} \frac{p}{p+q+3} \tau^{p+q+3}+\mathcal{O}\left(\tau^{p+q+5}\right)$, we can obtain an approximating expression for the normalizing term $c(p, \tau)$,

$$
c(p, \tau)=\frac{\Gamma\left(\frac{p-1}{2}\right)}{2 \pi^{\frac{p-1}{2}}}\left[\frac{p-1}{\tau^{p-1}}+\frac{1}{6} \frac{(p-1)^{2}(p-2)}{p+1} \frac{1}{\tau^{p-3}}\right]+\mathcal{O}\left(\tau^{5-p}\right)
$$

The variance and IoD for both small and great circle estimates are approximated as

$$
\begin{aligned}
V a r_{\text {small }} & =\frac{p-1}{p^{2}(p+1)} \tau^{2}+\mathcal{O}\left(\tau^{4}\right) \\
\text { Var }_{\text {great }} & =\frac{1}{(p+1)} \tau^{2}+\mathcal{O}\left(\tau^{4}\right) \\
\text { Io } D_{\text {small }} & =\frac{1}{p^{2}(p+1)^{2}} \tau^{2}+\mathcal{O}\left(\tau^{4}\right) \\
\text { Io } D_{\text {great }} & =\frac{4}{\pi^{2}} \frac{1}{(p+1)^{2}} \tau^{4}+\mathcal{O}\left(\tau^{6}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

From these, the compensating factor $C$ must satisfy

$$
C \geq(p+1)\left(p^{2}-p+1\right)
$$

We observe that $C$ diverges at a polynomial rate of order $p^{3}$ with fixed $\tau$.

Example 3.4. In the case of positive kurtosis, we propose the following probability density on $S^{p-1}$
$S_{2, \tau}(x ; \mu, \tau)=c(p, \tau) \mathbf{1}_{\left(\arccos \mu^{T} x<\tau\right)}\left(1-\frac{1}{\tau^{2}} \arccos ^{2}\left(\mu^{T} x\right)\right), \quad x \in S^{p-1}$
with the mode $\mu \in S^{p-1}$ and sufficiently small $\tau>0$. The normalizing term in an approximated polynomial form is

$$
c(p, \tau) \approx \frac{\Gamma\left(\frac{p-1}{2}\right)}{2 \pi^{\frac{p-1}{2}}}\left[\frac{(p-1)(p+1)}{2} \frac{1}{\tau^{p-1}}+\frac{1}{12} \frac{(p-1)^{2}(p-2)(p+1)}{p+3} \frac{1}{\tau^{p-3}}\right]
$$

The sectional function is

$$
g_{S_{2, \tau}}\left(\theta_{1}\right)=\mathbf{1}_{\left(\theta_{1}<\tau\right)}\left(1-\frac{1}{\tau^{2}} \theta_{1}^{2}\right)
$$

The variance and IoD for both small and great circle estimates are approximated as

$$
\begin{aligned}
V a r_{\text {small }} & =\frac{(p-1)\left(2 p^{2}+4 p+3\right)}{p^{2}(p+2)^{2}(p+3)} \tau^{2}+\mathcal{O}\left(\tau^{4}\right) \\
\text { Var } \text { great } & =\frac{1}{p+3} \tau^{2}+\mathcal{O}\left(\tau^{4}\right) \\
\text { Io } D_{\text {small }} & =\frac{\left(2 p^{2}+4 p+3\right)^{2}}{p^{2}(p+1)^{2}(p+2)^{2}(p+3)^{2}} \tau^{2}+\mathcal{O}\left(\tau^{4}\right) \\
\text { Io } D_{\text {great }} & =\frac{4}{\pi^{2}} \frac{1}{(p+3)^{2}} \tau^{4}+\mathcal{O}\left(\tau^{6}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

From these, the compensating factor $C$ must satisfy

$$
C>\frac{p^{2}(p+1)^{2}(p+2)^{2}(p+3)}{\left(2 p^{2}+4 p+3\right)^{2}} .
$$

Here $C$ diverges at a polynomial rate of order $p^{3}$ with fixed $\tau$ too.

Example 3.5. In the case of von Mises-Fisher distribution (Fisher,1953; Mardia and Jupp,1999), it is computationally intractable to derive an analytic form for moments of the azimuthal angle $\theta_{1}$ directly. Instead, we approximate highly-concentrated von Mises-Fisher distribution as a normal distribution on a q-dimensional tangent plane $(q=p-1)$. On the tangent plane, a radius $r$ from the tangent point is equivalent to the azimuthal angle $\theta_{1}$ from the pole $\mu$ on the sphere $S^{p-1}$. Here we set a spherical coordinate on the tangent plane as $\left(r, \theta_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, \theta_{q-2}^{\prime}, \phi^{\prime}\right)$. The marginal density of $r$ is given as

$$
g_{\text {normal }}(r)=\frac{1}{\left(2 \pi \sigma^{2}\right)^{q / 2}} \frac{2 \pi^{q / 2}}{\Gamma(q / 2)} r^{q-1} e^{-r^{2} / 2 \sigma^{2}}
$$

where $\sigma^{2}$ is the variance of the normal distribution on the tangent plane and very close to 0 . The moments of $r$ are then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mu_{1} & =\sqrt{2} \sigma \frac{\Gamma((q+1) / 2)}{\Gamma(q / 2)} \\
& =\sqrt{2} \sigma \sqrt{\frac{q}{2}}\left(1-\frac{1}{4 q}+\mathcal{O}\left(q^{-2}\right)\right) \\
\mu_{2} & =\sigma^{2} q
\end{aligned}
$$

For $\mu_{1}$, we used the following asymptotic expansion (Qi,2010)

$$
\frac{\Gamma(x+1 / 2)}{\Gamma(x)}=x^{1 / 2}-\frac{1}{8} x^{-1 / 2}+\mathcal{O}\left(x^{-3 / 2}\right)
$$

as $x$ goes to infinity. From these, the variance and IoD for small circle estimate are

$$
\begin{aligned}
\text { Var }_{\text {small }} & =\frac{\sigma^{2}}{2}+\mathcal{O}\left(q^{-1}\right) \\
\text { Io } D_{\text {small }} & =\frac{\sigma^{2}}{2(2 q-1)}+\mathcal{O}\left(q^{-2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

The variance of $\theta_{r}$ for a great circle estimate, or the second moment of the signed residual

$$
\frac{\pi}{2}-\theta_{v} \approx r \sin \theta_{1}^{\prime} \ldots \sin \theta_{q-2}^{\prime} \sin \phi^{\prime}
$$

is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\text { Var }_{\text {great }} & =\frac{1}{\left(2 \pi \sigma^{2}\right)^{q / 2}} \int_{0}^{2 \pi} \int_{0}^{\pi} \cdots \int_{0}^{\pi} e^{-r^{2} / 2 \sigma^{2}} r^{q+1} \sin ^{q+1} \theta_{1}^{\prime} \cdots \sin ^{3} \theta_{q-2}^{\prime} \sin ^{2} \phi^{\prime} d \theta_{1}^{\prime} \cdots d \phi \\
& =\sigma^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

and the IoD for a great circle estimate is

$$
\text { Io } D_{\text {great }}=\sigma^{4} /(\pi / 2)^{2} .
$$

From these, the compensating factor $C$ must satisfy

$$
C>2 p-1
$$

Here $C$ diverges at a polynomial rate of order 1 with respect to $p$.

In Simulation Study (Section 3.6) and Real Data Analysis (Section 3.7), we use the result of Example 3.5. Heuristically, to emphasize the contrast, we use the constant, two times $2 p-1$.

Notice that the determination of $C$ only depends on the dimension $p$ (or equivalently, $m$ ).

### 3.5.3 Geometric Interpretation of Model Bias

Suppose the data points on $S^{m}$ are concentrated near a subsphere $A_{m-1}$ of radius $r_{m}$, and we wish to recover $A_{m-1}$. Generally, it turns out that the subsphere estimate does not work well, but rather it is biased in radius. The bias occurs from the curvature of $A_{m-1}$, in that there are more chances the noise mass falls outward $A_{m-1}$ than inward, and so the estimate tends to have a larger radius than $A_{m-1}$. (Briefly, we use a term "outward" for a point $x \in S^{m}$ if $\arccos \left(v^{T} x\right)>r_{m}$ and "inward" if $\arccos \left(v^{T} x\right)<r_{m}$.)

We give a illustrative example. Let $A_{m-1}$ be a subsphere on $S^{m}$ which has an axis $v$ at the north pole and a radius $0<r_{m} \leq \pi / 2$. The points $x_{0 i}$ for $i=1, \ldots, n$ are distributed on $A_{m-1}$. Each data point $x_{i}$ is generated from a rotationally invariant distribution with a mean direction $x_{0 i}$.

It is easy to notice that the noise mass outward $A_{m-1}$ is bigger than that of inward, so that $x_{i}$ has more chance to posited outward $A_{m-1}$ than inward, see Figure 3.3. Thus the estimated radius $\widehat{r}_{m}$ is bigger than the true radius $r_{m}$ generally. A similar example on the plane was discussed in Hastie (1984).

We quantify the bias in the case where the noise follows the von Mises-Fisher distribution on $S^{m}$ (Fisher,1953; Mardia and Jupp,1999). Consider a vector $\mu$ such that $\arccos \left(\mu^{T} v\right)=r$ and the von Mises-Fisher distribution with the mean direction $\mu$ and the concentration parameter $\kappa$ whose density is given as

$$
f_{\mathrm{vMF}}\left(\mu^{T} x ; \kappa\right)=C_{m+1}(\kappa) \exp \left(\kappa \cdot \mu^{T} x\right),
$$

where the normalizing constant is $C_{m+1}(\kappa)=\kappa^{(m-1) / 2} /\left((2 \pi)^{(m+1) / 2} I_{(m+1) / 2}(\kappa)\right)$ with $I_{k}(x)$ the modified Bessel function of order $k$ for $x \geq 0$. We


Figure 3.3: A bird's eye view from the direction of $v$. Each data point $x_{i}$ is generated from a rotationally invariant distribution (circle) with a mean direction $\mu=x_{0 i}$.
suggest the following proposition about computing the expectation of $\theta_{v}=\arccos \left(v^{T} X\right)$, the angle between $X$ and an arbitrary point $v \in S^{m}$ on the sphere. Then the bias is defined as $\mathbb{E} \theta_{v}-r$.

Proposition 3.2. Let $v \in S^{m}$. Suppose a random vector $X \in S^{m}$ follows the von Mises-Fisher distribution with the mean direction $\mu \in S^{m}$ and the concentration parameter $\kappa$. Then the expectation of $\theta_{v}=\arccos \left(v^{T} X\right)$ is given as

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbb{E} \theta_{v} & =\int_{S^{m}} \arccos \left(v^{T} x\right) C(\kappa) \exp \left(\kappa \cdot \mu^{T} x\right) d \sigma(x)  \tag{3.8}\\
& =\sum_{l=0}^{\infty} A(l) Y_{l}^{0}\left(v^{T} \mu\right) \frac{\omega_{m}}{C_{l}^{(m-1) / 2}(1)} \int_{-1}^{1} \arccos (t) C_{l}^{(m-1) / 2}(t)\left(1-t^{2}\right)^{(m-2) / 2} d t \tag{3.9}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\lambda=(m-1) / 2, \omega_{m+1}=2 \pi^{(m+1) / 2} / \Gamma((m+1) / 2)$ the surface area of $S^{m+1}, Y_{l}^{0}(\cos \theta)$ the spherical harmonic function of degree $l$ and order 0 for $0 \leq \theta \leq \pi, C_{l}^{k}(x)$ the Gegenbauer polynomial of degree $l$ and order $k$ for $x \in[-1,1], \Gamma(x)$ the gamma function for $x>0$,

$$
c_{l}=\frac{\sqrt{\pi}}{(m-1)_{l} 2^{m-2}} \frac{\Gamma(m+l-1)}{\Gamma(m / 2) \Gamma((m-1) / 2)} \frac{I_{(m-1) / 2+l}(\kappa)}{I_{(m+1) / 2-1}(\kappa)}
$$

and

$$
A(l)=\sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\omega_{m+1}} \frac{l+\lambda}{\lambda} c_{l} \sqrt{\frac{(m-1)_{l} \frac{m-1}{2}}{l!\left(l+\frac{m-1}{2}\right)}}
$$

For the numerical computation of $\mathbb{E} \theta_{v}$, see Remark B.3 of Section B.1.6 in the supplementary materials. In a brief numerical study, where the $\operatorname{angle} \arccos \left(v^{T} \mu\right)$ ranges from 0 to $\pi / 2$, we observe that the bias always shows positive values and decreases monotonically, see Figure 3.4. The bias vanishes only when $v$ and $\mu$ are perpendicular. Also the bias becomes larger as the dimension $m$ increases. This is due to the curse of dimensionality, in that the more the dimension $m$ grows, the more the angle between separate points on $S^{m}$ become perpendicular. However, the bias becomes smaller as the concentration parameter $\kappa$ increases, that is, the noise mass is more concentrated around $\mu$.

### 3.6 Simulation Study

### 3.6.1 Example Dataset Generation

In this section, we shall evaluate the performance of our method. We consider the following random point generation procedures on $S^{d}$ with von Mises-Fisher error along a small arc.


Figure 3.4: The biases calculated from (3.8) are drawn in solid lines. The biases from Monte Carlo simulations are in dashed lines. The confidence intervals for Monte Carlo simulations are in grayshaded areas.

Fix $v=(0, \ldots, 0,1)^{T} \in S^{d}$ and $r \in[0, \pi / 2]$. Given a fixed vector $\left(t_{1}, \ldots, t_{d-1}\right)^{T} \in[0,2 \pi]^{d-1}$, we generate spherical angles $\left(\psi_{1}, \ldots, \psi_{d-1}\right)^{T}$ with each component $\psi_{i} \sim \operatorname{Unif}\left(\left[-0.5 \cdot t_{i}, 0.5 \cdot t_{i}\right]\right)$. Then the signal point $x^{\prime} \in S^{d}$ is obtained by the coordinate change, $x^{\prime}=\left(\left(\prod_{i=1}^{d-1} \sin \psi_{i}\right) \sin r, \cos \psi_{1}\left(\prod_{i=2}^{d-1} \sin \psi_{i}\right) \sin r, \ldots, \cos \psi_{d-1} \sin r, \cos r\right)^{T}$.

Let the point $x$ follow von Mises-Fisher distribution with a pole $x^{\prime}$ and a concentration parameter $\kappa$. We generate $n$ signal points $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ identically and independently as the same law as $x$. For figurative examples, see Figure 3.5.

Note that $\theta_{v}=\arccos \left(v^{T} x\right)$ is not independent from $\theta_{i}=$ $\arccos \left(e_{i}^{T} x\right)$, where $e_{i}$ is the $i$ th coordinate vector with $i=1, \ldots, d$.

We generate 100 sets of $n$ data points for given parameters. We then compute the average and standard deviation of estimated ra-


Figure 3.5: Examples of generic data generation $(n=100)$ (a) $r=45^{\circ}, \kappa=100, t_{1}=30^{\circ}$, (b) $r=90^{\circ}, \kappa=100, t_{1}=10^{\circ}$.
dius for $L_{1}, L_{2}$ penalties and MCP. In validation, we used 5 -cross validation on a grid of the tuning parameter $\tau,\left(0,10^{-3}, 10^{-2.9}, \ldots, 10^{-0.1}, 10^{0}\right)$.

For the case where the true radius $r=90^{\circ}$, we additionally record the number of data sets that mitigate type 1 overfitting phenomenon, that is, when the estimated radius $\widehat{r}=90^{\circ}$. For every dataset, we compute the mean and median of the angles between the true axis $v=(0, \ldots, 0,1)^{T}$ and data points $x_{i}$ 's, what we call oracle mean and median of radius.

### 3.6.2 Results

We first consider the case where $d=2$ and $n=100$. We assess the performance at the combination of settings, $r=90^{\circ}, 45^{\circ}, \kappa=$ 100,30 and $t_{1}=90^{\circ}, 60^{\circ}$.

We start with the results when the true radius $r$ is $90^{\circ}$. Here we want to see if the penalization of $r$ works well in mitigating
type 1 overfitting phenomenon.
We set $\kappa=100$. When $t_{1}=90^{\circ}$, we observe that the estimated radius has median at $90^{\circ}$ for $L_{1}$ penalty and MCP, see Figure 3.6a. In 76 of $L_{1}$ penalty and 78 of MCP penalty out of 100 data sets, type 1 overfitting was mitigated, see Table 3.1. No other penalties (original PNS and $L_{2}$ penalty) could not mitigate type 1 overfitting phenomenon. When $t_{1}=60^{\circ}, 74$ of $L_{1}$ penalty and 74 of MCP out of 100 data sets achieved $\widehat{r}=90^{\circ}$, see Figure 3.6 b and Table 3.1.

The pattern of estimated radius is quite different between $t_{1}=$ $90^{\circ}$ and $60^{\circ}$ cases. When $t_{1}=60^{\circ}$, as data points spans only $1 / 3$ of the true arc (equator of $S^{2}$ ), the estimation of axis, $\widehat{v}$, suffers larger variance compared to $t_{1}=90^{\circ}$. Indeed, we can observe the variances of estimated radius, $\widehat{r}$, is much larger when $t_{i}=60^{\circ}$, see Figure 3.7. However, even though larger variance in estimating $v$ and $r$, the rate of overfitting mitigation is quite similar in both $t_{1}=90^{\circ}$ and $60^{\circ}$ cases, see Table 3.1.

Next, for $\kappa=30$, where von Mises-Fisher distribution has a larger variance. When $t_{1}=90^{\circ}, 71$ of $L_{1}$ penalty and 73 of MCP penalty out of 100 data sets mitigated type 1 overfitting, see Figure 3.6 c and Table 3.1. When $t_{1}=60^{\circ}, 75$ of $L_{1}$ penalty and 76 of MCP penalty out of 100 data sets mitigated type 1 overfitting, see Figure 3.6 b and Table 3.1. We observe larger variances in radius estimations than $\kappa=100$ cases. Even though the instability in axis estimation, the rate of overfitting mitigation showed no significant difference from the case $\kappa=100$.

For a larger data set size, $n=1000$ with the same setting, $r=90^{\circ}, \kappa=100,30$ and $t_{1}=90^{\circ}, 60^{\circ}$. The rate of overfitting
(a) $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}, \kappa=100$
(b) $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=60^{\circ}, \kappa=100$

(c) $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}, \kappa=30$

(d) $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=60^{\circ}, \kappa=30$


Figure 3.6: Results of radius estimation when $d=2, r=90^{\circ}$ and $n=100$.
mitigation improved compared to $n=100$ cases, see Figure B.2.1 and Table 3.1. The mean and standard deviation of estimated radius are improved significantly.

When $r=45^{\circ}$, there is no danger of type 1 overgfitting. $L_{1}$ and $L_{2}$ penalties shows significantly large bias in estimating radius, see Figure 3.8 and Table B.2.1, whereas MCP shows the identical results as original PNS. $L_{1}$ and $L_{2}$ penalties also shows larger variance than original PNS and MCP due to the instability in axis estimation.

To present the results on type 2 overfitting phenomenon, we consider two situtation, (1) $r=5^{\circ}$ with $t_{1}=90^{\circ}, \kappa=100, n=100$ and (2) $r=90^{\circ}$ with $t_{1}=10^{\circ}, \kappa=100, n=100$. The first case mimics a disc-shaped distribution (high concentrated unimodal
(a) $t_{1}=90^{\circ}$, PNS
(b) $t_{1}=90^{\circ}, L_{1}$
(c) $t_{1}=90^{\circ}, \mathrm{MCP}$

(d) $t_{1}=60^{\circ}$, PNS


(e) $t_{1}=60^{\circ}, L_{1}$


(f) $t_{1}=60^{\circ}$, MCP


Figure 3.7: Results of axis estimation when $d=2, r=90^{\circ}$ and $n=100$. The estimated axis $\widehat{v}$ are mapped to the tangent plane at $(0,0,1)^{T}$ by the exponential map $\operatorname{Exp}_{(0,0,1)^{T}}$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { (a) } r=45^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}, \kappa=100, \text { (b) } r=45^{\circ}, t_{1}=60^{\circ}, \kappa=100, \\
& n=100 \quad n=100
\end{aligned}
$$



(c) $r=45^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}, \kappa=30$,
(d) $r=45^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}, \kappa=100$, $n=100$

$$
n=1000
$$



Figure 3.8: Results of radius estimation when $d=2, r=45^{\circ}$.

|  |  | Original PNS | $L_{1}$ | $L_{2}$ | MCP | Mean (Oracle) | Median (Oracle) |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n=100$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}$, | mean (sd) | $88.72(1.04)$ | $89.42(1.00)$ | $89.42(0.87)$ | $89.51(1.03)$ | $89.97(0.58)$ | $89.93(0.66)$ |
| $\kappa=100$ | $\widehat{r}=\pi / 2$ | 0 | $\mathbf{7 6}$ | 0 | $\mathbf{7 8}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=60^{\circ}$, | mean (sd) | $88.67(2.49)$ | $88.62(2.62)$ | $88.65(2.39)$ | $88.57(2.76)$ | $90.05(0.52)$ | $90.10(0.59)$ |
| $\kappa=100$ | $\widehat{r}=\pi / 2$ | 0 | $\mathbf{7 4}$ | 0 | $\mathbf{7 4}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}$, | mean (sd) | $87.75(1.86)$ | $88.97(1.82)$ | $88.83(1.65)$ | $88.95(1.96)$ | $90.05(0.96)$ | $90.13(1.22)$ |
| $\kappa=30$ | $\widehat{r}=\pi / 2$ | 0 | $\mathbf{7 1}$ | 0 | $\mathbf{7 3}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=60^{\circ}$, | mean (sd) | $82.31(7.46)$ | $87.12(5.51)$ | $86.95(5.29)$ | $87.07(5.80)$ | $90.09(0.94)$ | $90.18(1.10)$ |
| $\kappa=30$ | $\widehat{r}=\pi / 2$ | 0 | $\mathbf{7 5}$ | 0 | $\mathbf{7 6}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $n=1000$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}$, | mean (sd) | $89.96(0.24)$ | $89.92(0.20)$ | $89.88(0.18)$ | $89.92(0.22)$ | $90.01(0.17)$ | $90.00(0.22)$ |
| $\kappa=100$ | $\widehat{r}=\pi / 2$ | 0 | $\mathbf{8 2}$ | 0 | $\mathbf{8 4}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=60^{\circ}$, | mean (sd) | $88.91(0.80)$ | $89.67(0.76)$ | $89.63(0.67)$ | $89.68(0.79)$ | $90.00(0.16)$ | $90.00(0.22)$ |
| $\kappa=100$ | $\widehat{r}=\pi / 2$ | 0 | $\mathbf{8 1}$ | 0 | $\mathbf{8 3}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}$, | mean (sd) | $89.27(0.48)$ | $89.78(0.47)$ | $89.72(0.40)$ | $89.77(0.52)$ | $90.02(0.32)$ | $90.01(0.41)$ |
| $\kappa=30$ | $\widehat{r}=\pi / 2$ | 0 | $\mathbf{7 9}$ | 0 | $\mathbf{8 0}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=60^{\circ}$, | mean (sd) | $87.06(1.45)$ | $89.15(1.68)$ | $89.08(1.63)$ | $89.06(1.93)$ | $90.00(0.31)$ | $89.99(0.40)$ |
| $\kappa=30$ | $\widehat{r}=\pi / 2$ | 0 | $\mathbf{7 5}$ | 0 | $\mathbf{7 9}$ | 0 | 0 |

Table 3.1: Results of radius estimation when $d=2$ and $r=90^{\circ}$.
distribution) (Figure 3.2 left) and the second case represents a situation where the data points are generated along a great sphere but on a short interval (Figure 3.1b).

In both cases, IoD criterion successfully mitigated type 2 overfitting phenomenon. In the first case $\left(r=5^{\circ}\right)$, only $L_{1}$ penalty with IoD and MCP with IoD estimated radius as $90^{\circ}$ with rates 91 and 92 out of 100 data sets. In the second case $\left(r=90^{\circ}\right), L_{1}$ penalty and MCP mitigated overfitting only 5 and 4 times respectivelym but $L_{1}$ penalty with IoD and MCP with IoD achieved 94 and 99 times out of 100 data sets. The original PNS only yielded overfitted results.

### 3.7 Real Data Analysis

In this section, we apply the proposed PenPNS to a dataset called the Cephalometric X-ray Image Data, a landmark dataset on the sagittal-view X-ray images of patients' skulls (Wang et al.,2016). We choose to use 400 adolescent cases with 19 landmarks on 2-D dental X-ray images, that is, the dataset has dimension $19 \times 2 \times$ 400. The dataset was preprocessed by the Generalized Procrustes Analysis method (GPA) (Mardia and Jupp,1999; Chapter 3 of Dryden and Mardia,2016), which results in 400 points on $S^{36}$.

We applied PNS, PenPNS (MCP), Principal Geodesic Nested Spheres (PNGS) (Jung,2012) and PenPNS (MCP) with IoD criterion (for short, PenPNS+IoD) on the Cephalometric X-ray Image Data. Here, PNGS is a variant of PNS, such that radius $r$ is fixed as $\pi / 2$ while estimating parameters of each subsphere $A_{m}$, thus the data points are forced to be estimated by great sphere at every
step.
We want to compare the results of the methods with respect to variance explained (Figure B.3.1 and B.3.2) and estimated radii (Figure 3.10). For overall results, see Table B.3.1-B.3.4 in the supplementary materials.

Variance explained is obtained as follows. We use the residual $\Xi(m)$ of $\mathfrak{A}_{m}$ after fitting $\mathfrak{A}_{m}$ inside $\mathfrak{A}_{m+1}$ (they are indeed analogues of the $(m+1)$ th PC of classical PCA in Euclidean space). The variance $s_{m}^{2}$ of the $m$ th component is the squared sum of $\Xi(m)$. The percent of variance $s_{m}^{2}$ is the proportion of $s_{m}^{2}$ over the sum of all variances. For more details, see Section 2.4 of (Jung, 2012).

PenPNS yielded $66.53 \%$ in the first component of variance proportions. This figure is slightly lower than the one of PNS, $68.49 \%$, see Figure B.3.1 and Table B.3.1 and B.3.2 in the supplementary materials.

However, two methods show a different implication in the estimated radii. The estimated radii of PNS vary from $15.47^{\circ}$ to $90^{\circ}$ (TableB.3.1). In contrast, PenPNS yielded mostly $90^{\circ}$ except $8.86^{\circ}$ of $A_{3}$ and $22.23^{\circ}$ of $A_{1}$ (Table B.3.2), which means PenPNS mitigated type 1 overfitting phenomenon in nearly every dimension. It is notable that type 1 overfitting mitigations in high dimensions show little influence on variance proportions in lower dimensions.

In constrast, PNGS and PenPNS+IoD featured $39.41 \%$ and $40.79 \%$ in the first component of variance proportions, see Figure B.3.2 and Table B.3.3 and B.3.4 in the supplementary materials. It is notable that every estimated radii of PenPNS +IoD is $90^{\circ}$
(Figure 3.10) and PenPNS + IoD yielded nearly identical results as PNGS (Table B.3.3 and B.3.4).

One of the key observations here is that PenPNS+IoD mitigated type 2 overfitting at $A_{3}\left(8.86^{\circ}\right.$ to $\left.90^{\circ}\right)$, in addition to type 1 overfitting mitigation by PenPNS. It may seem a small correction in radius estimation, but resulted in large differences in variance proportions between two methods.

We interpret the results as follows. By mitigating type 2 overfitting at $A_{3}$, PenPNS + IoD corrected overfitting tendency shown in the original PNS and PenPNS (66.53 and $68.59 \%$ to $40.79 \%$ in the first component of variance proportions). It also corrected slight underfitting in PNGS (39.41\% to $40.79 \%$ ).

We visualize the results by drawing the principal mode of variation (call PC1 and PC2 from $\mathfrak{A}_{1}$ and $\mathfrak{A}_{2}$ respectively) on the data points, see Figure 3.11 and 3.12 . We observe that PC1 of the original PNS and PenPNS make small circles in data point clouds, which implies type 2 overfitting phenomenon. In contrast, PC1 of PenPNS+IoD and PNGS draw gentle arcs through data point clouds, which implies the mitigation of type 2 overfitting.

$$
\text { (a) } r=5^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}, \kappa=100, n=100
$$


(b) $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=10^{\circ}, \kappa=100, n=100$


Figure 3.9: Results on mitigating type 2 overfitting phenomenon.

서울대학교


Figure 3.10: Cephalometric X-ray Image Data : Estimated radii $\widehat{r}_{m}$ of small sphere estimators $A_{m}\left(\widehat{v}_{k}, \widehat{r}_{m}\right)$ for PNS, PenPNS (MCP), PNGS and PenPNS (MCP) + IoD Criterion.


Figure 3.11: Cephalometric X-ray Image Data : The principal mode of variation by $\mathfrak{A}_{1}$ (left column) and $\mathfrak{A}_{2}$ (right column). (a)(b) PNS, (c)(d) PenPNS (MCP).

서울대학교


Figure 3.12: Cephalometric X-ray Image Data : The principal mode of variation by $\mathfrak{A}_{1}$ (left column) and $\mathfrak{A}_{2}$ (right column). (a)(b) PNGS, (c)(d) PenPNS (MCP) + IoD criterion.

## Appendix A

## Supplementary Materials for Chapter 2

## A. 1 Mathematical Backgrounds of Section

### 2.3.1

## A.1. 1 Principal Angles

There had been suggested several definitions of the distance between two linear subspaces $[A]$ and $[B]$ in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$, see Table 2 and Theorem 12 of Ye and Lim (2016). Indeed, these distances can be expressed by principal angles between two linear subspaces.

In this section, we present the concept of principal angles ( Bj orck and Golub,1973). Principal angles between two linear subspaces are defined as follows: Given $[A] \in \operatorname{Gr}\left(n, p_{1}\right)$ and $[B] \in \operatorname{Gr}\left(n, p_{2}\right)$, let $p=\min \left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right)$. The $i$ th principal vectors $\left(a_{i}, b_{i}\right), i=1, \ldots, p$
are defined as a pair of unit vectors that satisfies

$$
a_{i}^{T} b_{i}=\max _{v \in[A]} \max _{u \in[B]} v^{T} u
$$

with the condition $a_{i} \perp a_{1}, \ldots, a_{i-1}$ and $b_{i} \perp b_{1}, \ldots, b_{i-1}$. Principal angles are then a set of angles $\theta=\left(\theta_{1}, \ldots, \theta_{p}\right)^{T}$ such that

$$
\cos \theta_{i}=a_{i}^{T} b_{i}
$$

for $i=1, \ldots, p$. We call $\theta_{i}$ as $i$ th principal angle between $[A]$ and $[B]$. Note that $0 \leq \theta_{1} \leq \ldots, \leq \theta_{p} \leq \pi / 2$.

The computation of principal angles can be performed using SVD. Suppose $[A]$ and $[B]$ are represented by $A \in \mathrm{~V}\left(n, p_{1}\right)$ and $B \in \mathrm{~V}\left(n, p_{2}\right)$ respectively. By the untruncated SVD, we decompose $A^{T} B$ into

$$
A^{T} B=U \Sigma V^{T}
$$

where $U \in \mathbb{R}^{p_{1} \times p_{1}}$ and $V \in \mathbb{R}^{p_{2} \times p_{2}}$ are orthonormal and $\Sigma \in$ $\mathbb{R}^{p_{1} \times p_{2}}$ is a diagonal matrix of a rectangular shape,

$$
\Sigma=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\Sigma_{1} & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

with a diagonal $\Sigma_{1} \in \mathbb{R}^{p \times p}$. The diagonal elements of $\Sigma_{1}$ are written $\sigma_{1} \geq \ldots \geq \sigma_{p} \geq 0$ in order and the principal angles between $[A]$ and $[B]$ can be easily calculated as

$$
\sigma_{i}=\cos \theta_{i}
$$

for $i=1, \ldots, p$.
We show an example of subspace distance expressed using principal angles: the Frobenius norm distance, appeared in Section 1.1
and 2.3.1, can be expressed as

$$
\begin{aligned}
d([A],[B]) & =\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\left\|A A^{T}-B B^{T}\right\|^{2} \\
& =\sqrt{2}\left(n-\operatorname{Tr}\left(A^{T} A B^{T} B\right)\right) \\
& =\sqrt{2}\left(n-\left(\cos ^{2} \theta_{1}+\ldots+\cos ^{2} \theta_{n}\right)\right) \\
& =\sqrt{2} \sum_{i=1}^{p} \sin ^{2} \theta_{i} \\
& =\sqrt{2}\|\sin \theta\|_{2}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $A$ and $B$ are orthonormal matrices which represent $[A] \in$ $\operatorname{Gr}\left(n, p_{1}\right)$ and $[B] \in \operatorname{Gr}\left(n, p_{2}\right)$ and $p=\min \left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right)$.

## A.1.2 Calculation of Mean Direction

We wish to explain the concept of mean direction in perspective of the flag mean. The mean direction among a set of linear subspaces $\left[V_{1}\right], \ldots,\left[V_{K}\right]$ is defined as a one-dimensional subspace $v_{\left\{\left[V_{i}\right]\right\}_{i=1}^{K}}$ that minimize the sum of the squares of the subspace distances between $v_{\left\{\left[V_{i}\right]\right\}_{i=1}^{K}}$ and each linear subspace $\left[V_{i}\right]$. That is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
v_{\left\{\left[V_{i}\right]\right\}_{i=1}^{K}}=\underset{[v] \in \operatorname{Gr}(n, 1)}{\arg \min } \sum_{i=1}^{K} \mathrm{~d}\left([v],\left[V_{i}\right]\right)^{2}, \tag{A.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathrm{d}([A],[B])$ is a subspace distance between subspaces $[A]$ and $[B]$.

In this definition, we adopt the Frobenius norm distance as a measure of distance between two linear subspaces. The optimization problem A.1 can be rewritten as follows (we quoted the derivations directly from Draper et al. (2014):

$$
\begin{aligned}
v_{\left\{\left[V_{i}\right]\right\}_{i=1}^{K}} & =\underset{[v] \in \operatorname{Gr}(n, 1)}{\arg \min } \sum_{i=1}^{K} \mathrm{~d}_{p F}\left([v],\left[V_{i}\right]\right)^{2} \\
& =\underset{[v] \in \operatorname{Gr}(n, 1)}{\arg \min } \sum_{i=1}^{K}\left\|\sin \theta_{i}\right\|^{2} \\
& =\underset{[v] \in \operatorname{Gr}(n, 1)}{\arg \max } \sum_{i=1}^{K}\left\|\cos \theta_{i}\right\|^{2} \\
& =\underset{[v] \in \operatorname{Gr}(n, 1)}{\arg \max } \sum_{i=1}^{K} \cos ^{2} \theta_{i} \\
& =\underset{[v] \in \operatorname{Gr}(n, 1)}{\arg \max } \sum_{i=1}^{K} v^{T} V_{i} V_{i}^{T} v \\
& =\underset{[v] \in \operatorname{Gr}(n, 1)}{\arg \max } v^{T}\left(\sum_{i=1}^{K} V_{i} V_{i}^{T}\right) v .
\end{aligned}
$$

There is a merit of using Frobenius norm distance we can see in the fifth equality, in that there is a closed form converting an expression of the principal angle $\theta$ into of $v$ and $V_{i} \mathrm{~s}$, or, $\cos ^{2} \theta_{i}=$ $v^{T} V_{i} V_{i}^{T} v$. Other distances, such as the Procrustes distance $2\left\|\sin ^{2} \frac{1}{2} \theta\right\|$ or the geodesic distance $\|\theta\|_{2}$, are not suitable for making this kind of linear expression using $v$ and $V_{i} \mathrm{~S}$.

Another merit comes from the last equality that this optimization problem is equivalent to the variational characterization of SVD (Draper et al.,2014). The solution is indeed the first singular vector of the symmetric matrix

$$
\left(\sum_{i=1}^{K} V_{i} V_{i}^{T}\right)
$$

This sum of matrices term can be rewritten with respect to a concatenated matrix. Let $V$ be a matrix that is a column concate-
nation of $V_{i} \mathrm{~s}$,

$$
V=\left[V_{1} ; V_{2} ; \ldots ; V_{K}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times \sum r_{i}} .
$$

It is easy to show that $V V^{T}=\sum_{i=1}^{K} V_{i} V_{i}^{T}$. Therefore, the principal direction among $V_{1}, \ldots, V_{K}$ can be conveniently computed using SVD. The SVD of $V$ is expressed as

$$
V=Q \Sigma W^{T}
$$

and subsequently

$$
V V^{T}=Q \Sigma \Sigma^{T} Q^{T}
$$

Note that the rank of $V V^{T}$ is the same as that of $V$. The first column of $Q$ is the principal direction $v_{\left\{V_{i}\right\}_{i=1}^{K}}$ we are looking for. In practice, it can be computed efficiently using truncated SVD numerical solutions.

## A. 2 Proofs

## A.2.1 Some Basic Facts for Proofs

As it is the most elementary fact, we begin by recapitulating Lemma 2.2 and show its proof.

Lemma 2.2. For $i, j \in \mathcal{I}_{K}$ and $S_{i} \cap S_{j} \neq \phi,\left[W_{i}\right] \perp\left[W_{j}\right]$.

Proof. From the definition of the partially-joint score subspace, [ $W_{i}$ ], we immediately find that

$$
\left[W_{i}\right] \perp\left[W_{j}\right], \quad i, j \in \mathcal{I}_{K} \quad \text { and } S_{j} \cap S_{i} \neq \phi
$$

by the range-kernel complementarity property of the vector space projection transformation.

We denote $\mathcal{I}_{<i}=\left\{j: j<i, S_{j} \cap S_{i} \neq \phi\right\}$. Hereafter $\mathcal{N}(T)$ is the null space of a linear transformation $T$ of $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\mathcal{R}(T)$ its range space.

Lemma A.1. For $i \in \mathcal{I}_{K}$, we have $\mathcal{N}\left(\bigcirc_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}} P_{k}^{\perp}\right)=\oplus_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left[W_{k}\right]$. Proof. Let $v \in \oplus_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left[W_{k}\right]$. Then there exists a unique $\left\{v_{k}\right\}_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}$ with $v_{k} \in\left[W_{k}\right]$ such that the sum of all $v_{k}$ is $v$. For each $j_{1} \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}$ and $v_{j_{1}} \in\left[W_{j_{1}}\right]$, it can be easily checked that $\left(\bigcirc_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<j_{1}}} P_{k}^{\perp}\right)\left(v_{j_{1}}\right)=$ $\{0\}$ and then $\left(\bigcirc_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}} P_{k}^{\perp}\right)\left(v_{j_{1}}\right)=\{0\}$ follows. Thus $\left(\bigcirc_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}} P_{k}^{\perp}\right)(v)=$ $\{0\}$ and $\mathcal{N}\left(\bigcirc_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}} P_{k}^{\perp}\right) \supset \oplus_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left[W_{k}\right]$.

Conversely, let $v^{\prime} \notin \oplus_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left[W_{k}\right]$. Then there exists a unique $\left\{v_{k}\right\}_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}$ with $v_{k} \in\left[W_{k}\right]$ and non-zero $a \in\left(\oplus_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left[W_{k}\right]\right)^{\perp}$ such that $v^{\prime}$ is the sum of all $v_{k}$ and $a$. For each $j_{1} \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}$ and $v_{j_{1}} \in\left[W_{j_{1}}\right]$, we have $\left(\bigcirc_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}} P_{k}^{\perp}\right)\left(v_{j_{1}}\right)=\{0\}$ as before. Since $a \perp\left[W_{k^{\prime \prime}}\right]$ for
any $k^{\prime \prime} \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}$, we also have $\left(\bigcirc_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}} P_{k}^{\perp}\right)(a) \neq 0$. Thus we have $\left(\bigcirc_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}} P_{k}^{\perp}\right)\left(v^{\prime}\right) \neq\{0\}$ and $\mathcal{N}\left(\bigcirc_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}} P_{k}^{\perp}\right) \subset \oplus_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left[W_{k}\right]$.

Lemma A.2. For $i \in \mathcal{I}_{K}$, we have $\oplus_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left[W_{k}\right]=+_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$.

Proof. We give a proof by induction on $k$. If $k=1$, there is nothing to prove. If $k=2,\left[W_{1}\right]=\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{1}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]$, so the statement is true for $k=1,2$.

For any $k \geq 3$, suppose the statement holds, that is,

$$
\oplus_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<m}}\left[W_{j}\right]=+_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<m}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)
$$

for all $1 \leq m \leq k$. Let $\tilde{k}$ be the largest element in $\mathcal{I}_{<k+1}$. We denote $P=\bigcirc_{k^{\prime} \in \mathcal{I}_{<\tilde{k}}} P_{k^{\prime}}^{\perp}$ and $P^{\perp}$, the projection onto $\mathcal{N}(P)$ of $\mathbb{R}^{n}$. Then, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
+_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<k+1}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) & =\oplus_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<\tilde{k}}}\left[W_{j}\right]+\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{\tilde{k}}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right] \\
& =\oplus_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<\tilde{k}}}\left[W_{j}\right]+P\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{\tilde{k}}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)+P^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{\tilde{k}}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Indeed, $P^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{\tilde{k}}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \subset \mathcal{N}(P)$ and $\mathcal{N}(P)=\oplus_{k^{\prime} \in \mathcal{I}_{<\tilde{k}}}\left[W_{k^{\prime}}\right]$ by the previous lemma. Thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
+_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<k+1}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) & =\oplus_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<\tilde{k}}}\left[W_{j}\right]+P\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{\tilde{k}}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \\
& =\oplus_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<\tilde{k}}}\left[W_{j}\right] \oplus\left[W_{\tilde{k}}\right] \\
& =\oplus_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<k+1}}\left[W_{j}\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore the statement holds for any $k \geq 3$ and the proof is completed.

Lemma A.3. For $k=1, \ldots, K,+_{i \in\left\{k \in S_{i}\right\}}\left[W_{S_{i}}\right]=\left[V_{k}\right]$.

Proof. In Lemma A.2, we set $i$ such that $S_{i}=\{k\}$. Then $\mathcal{I}_{<i}=$ $\left\{j: k \in S_{j},\left|S_{j}\right|>1\right\}$ and $\oplus_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left[W_{j}\right]=+_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$. The proof goes similarly as in Lemma A.2. Let $\tilde{i}$ be the largest element in $\mathcal{I}_{<i}$. We denote $P=\bigcirc_{k^{\prime} \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}} P_{k^{\prime}}^{\perp}$ and $P^{\perp}$, the projection onto $\mathcal{N}(P)$ of $\mathbb{R}^{n}$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
+_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<i} \cup S_{i}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) & =\oplus_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left[W_{j}\right]+\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right] \\
& =\oplus_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left[W_{j}\right]+P\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)+P^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \\
& =\oplus_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left[W_{j}\right]+P\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \\
& =\oplus_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left[W_{j}\right] \oplus\left[W_{i}\right] \\
& =\oplus_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<i} \cup S_{i}}\left[W_{j}\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

By the set inclusion-exclusion principle, as $\mathcal{I}_{<i} \cup S_{i}$ involves every index-set that contains $k$, it is immediate that $+_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<i} \cup S_{i}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)=$ $\left[V_{k}\right]$.

## A.2.2 Proof of Theorem 2.1

Proof. We claim that $\operatorname{rank}\left(\left[W_{i}\right]\right)$ is uniquely determined. By Sylvester's law of nullity, we have
$\operatorname{rank}\left(\left[W_{i}\right]\right)=\operatorname{rank}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)-\operatorname{rank}\left(\mathcal{N}\left(\bigcirc_{j \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}} P_{j}^{\perp}\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)\right)$,
where $\mathcal{I}_{<i}=\left\{j: j<i, S_{j} \cap S_{i} \neq \phi\right\}$ as before. By lemma A.1 and A.2. Sylvester's law of nullity for our theorem is restated as

$$
\operatorname{rank}\left(\left[W_{i}\right]\right)=\operatorname{rank}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)-\operatorname{rank}\left(\left(+_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)\right) .
$$

We want to make this expression in a more explicit form. For that, we suggest the following assertions.

Let $l=\left|S_{i}\right|$. We set $\left[I_{l}\right]=+_{k \in\left\{k:\left|S_{k}\right|>l\right\}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$. The projection onto $\left[I_{l}\right]$ in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ is denoted by $P_{I_{l}}$ and the projection onto $\left[I_{l}\right]^{\perp}$ is denoted by $P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}$. Moreover, we consider an index set $\mathcal{J}_{i,>l}=$ $\mathcal{I}_{<i} \cap\left\{k:\left|S_{k}\right|>l\right\}$ and let $\left[J_{i}\right]=+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i,>l}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$. The projection onto $\left[J_{i}\right]$ in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ is denoted by $P_{J_{i}}$ and the projection onto $\left[J_{i}\right]^{\perp}$ by $P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}$. Finally, we define $\mathcal{J}_{i, l}=\mathcal{I}_{<i} \cap\left\{k:\left|S_{k}\right|=l\right\}$.

Lemma A.4. $P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}=P_{I_{l}}^{\perp} \circ P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}$.
Proof. Trivial from the fact $\mathcal{N}\left(P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\right) \subset \mathcal{N}\left(P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\right)$.
Lemma A.5. If $v_{j} \in P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ with $j \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l} \backslash \mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}$, then $v_{j} \in\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{m}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ for some $m<i$, $m \neq j$ such that $S_{m} \cap S_{i}=\{0\}$ and not for any $m<i, m \neq j$ such that $S_{m} \cap S_{i} \neq\{0\}$.

Proof. Consider the cases
(1) $v_{j} \in\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{m}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ for some $m<i, m \neq j$ such that $S_{m} \cap S_{i} \neq\{0\}$ but not for any $S_{m} \cap S_{i}=\{0\}$,
(2) $\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{m}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)=\{0\}$ for only $m \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}$

In case (1), $v_{j}$ becomes automatically an element of $\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{t}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]$ such that $S_{j} \subset S_{t}$ and $S_{m} \subset S_{t}$. Then $v_{j} \in\left[I_{i}\right]$ since $S_{i} \cap S_{t} \neq \phi$ and $\left|S_{t}\right|>\left|S_{i}\right|$, and this is a contradiction. In case (2), $v_{j} \notin \mathcal{R}\left(P_{I_{l}}\right)$ and this is contradict to the assumption.

Proposition A.1. If $\left[V_{k}\right]_{k \in \mathcal{K}}$ is relatively independent, then $+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}} P P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ and $P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)$ are independent.

Proof. We want to show that the relative independence of $\left[V_{k}\right]_{k \in \mathcal{K}}$ is violated if $+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}} P \frac{J_{i}}{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ and $P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)$ are linearly
dependent. Suppose that there is nonzero $v \in+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}} P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap$ $P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)$ with $l=\left|S_{i}\right|$. We are going to show that $+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}} P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap$ $P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)$ is not $\{0\}$ in the following cases.

First we exclude the case where $P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)=\{0\}$. If so we have $\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]=\oplus_{k^{\prime \prime} \in\left\{k^{\prime \prime}: S_{i} \subset S_{k^{\prime \prime}}\right\}}\left[W_{k}^{\prime \prime}\right]=+_{k^{\prime \prime} \in\left\{k^{\prime \prime}: S_{i} \subset S_{k^{\prime \prime}}\right\}}\left[V_{k}^{\prime \prime}\right]$, then $\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]$ itself is in $\left.\left[I_{i}\right]=\mathcal{N}\left(P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\right)\right)$.

Next, under the assumption that $P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \neq\{0\}$, we run through the following situations. Now on $\mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}=\left\{k:\left|S_{k}\right|=\right.$ $\left.l, k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}, P_{I_{i}}^{\perp}\left(S_{k}\right) \neq\{0\}\right\}$.
(i) $\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}\right|=0$ : There is nothing to prove.
(ii) $\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}\right|=1$ and $\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}\right|=0$ :

We will show that this case is vacuous. Suppose there exist nonzero $v \in P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ with $k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}$. As $P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)=\{0\}$, we can deduce that $P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}(v)=0$.

We pick a vector $u$ in $\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]$ such that $S_{i} \subset S_{j}$ and $S_{j} \subset S_{j}$. As $\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right] \subset \cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]$ and $\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right] \subset$ $\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]$, we have $u \in\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$. As $S_{i} \cap S_{j} \neq \phi$, we observe that $\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right] \subset\left[I_{i}\right]=\mathcal{N}\left(P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\right)$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
u & \in P_{J_{i}}\left(\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)\right) \\
& \subset P_{J_{i}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap P_{J_{i}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $w=u+v$. Since $u \in P_{J_{i}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ and $v \in P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ with respect to $S_{k}$ and the same for $S_{i}$, we find that $w \in$ $\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$, and then, $w \in\left[I_{i}\right]=\mathcal{N}\left(P_{j_{i}}^{\perp}\right)$. But this forces $P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}(w)=v$ and $v$ to be zero and leads to vacuity.
(iii) $\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}\right|=1$ and $\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}\right|=1$ :

Suppose there is nonzero $v \in P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ with $k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}$. From Lemma A.4, we have $P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}(v) \in P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$. By the same argument, $P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}(v) \in P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$. Then there is a nonzero $P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}(v) \in P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$.
(iv) $\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}\right| \geq 2,\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}\right|=0$ and $v \in P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ with some $k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}:$ the same as case (ii).
(v) $\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}\right| \geq 2,\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}\right|=0$ and $v \notin P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ with any of $k \notin \mathcal{J}_{i, l}:$
We will show that this case is a generalization of case (ii) and also vacuous. As $v \in+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}} P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$, we express

$$
v=\sum_{j \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}} a_{j} v_{j}
$$

for each $a_{j} \in \mathbb{R}$ (at least two of them are nonzero) and $v_{j} \in P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$.

By Lemma A.5, for each $v_{j}$ for $j \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}$, we can find $S_{m, j}$ such that $v_{j} \in S_{m, j}$ and $m<i, m \neq j, S_{m} \cap S_{i}=\{0\}$. And this also implies that there exists certain $S_{t, j}$ and $v_{j} \in S_{t, j}$ such that $S_{j} \subset S_{t, j}$ and $S_{m, j} \subset S_{t, j}$. Here we point out that as $S_{t, j} \cap S_{i} \neq \phi$, since $S_{j} \cap S_{i} \neq \phi$. Then all $\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{t, j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]$ for $j \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}$ and their linear combinations are subsets of $\left[I_{i}\right]$. This leads to the conclusion $v \in\left[I_{i}\right]$ and shows the vacuity of this case.
(vi) $\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}\right| \geq 2,\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}\right| \geq 1$ and $v \in P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ with some $k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}:$

If $k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}$, then the same as the case (iii). If $k \notin \mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}$, then the same as the case (ii).
(vii) $\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}\right| \geq 2,\left|\mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}\right| \geq 1$ and $v \notin P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ with any of $k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}:$
As $v \in+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}} P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$, we express

$$
v=\sum_{j \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}} a_{j} v_{j}
$$

for each $a_{j} \in \mathbb{R}$ (at least two of them are nonzero) and $v_{j} \in P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$. Note that if $a_{j^{\prime}}=0$ for all $j^{\prime} \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}$, then this case is essentially the same as case (v), so we only consider the situation at least one $a_{j^{\prime}} \neq 0$ for $j^{\prime} \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}$.

By Lemma A.5 and its consequences in case (v), for each $j \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l} \backslash \mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}$, there exists $S_{t, j}$ and $v_{j} \in S_{t, j}$ such that $S_{j} \subset$ $S_{t, j}$ and $S_{m, j} \subset S_{t, j}$. As previously discussed, $\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{t, j}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]$ for $j \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l} \backslash \mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}$ is a subset of $\left[I_{i}\right]$. So we rule out the terms involving $j \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l} \backslash \mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}$ and then

$$
P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}(v)=\sum_{j^{\prime} \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}} a_{j^{\prime}} P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}\left(v_{j^{\prime}}\right) .
$$

Since each $\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{j^{\prime}}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right] \neq\{0\}$ for $j \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}^{\prime}$ is a subset of $\left[I_{i}\right]$ and at least one $a_{j^{\prime}} \neq 0$, we deduce that $P_{I_{l}}^{\perp}(v)$ is non-zero. Therefore, the relative independence is violated.

Now the last term in the RHS of our law of nullity is re-
expressed as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(+_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right) \\
= & \left(\left(+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i,<l}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)\right) \oplus\left(+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}} P \frac{\text { J. }}{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)\right)\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right) \\
= & \left(\left(+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i,<l}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)\right) \oplus\left(+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}} P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)\right)\right) \\
& \cap\left(P_{J_{i}}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right) \oplus P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

In Proposition A.1. we have observed that $+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}} P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ and $P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)$ are independent. As $P_{J_{i}}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right) \subset+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i,<l}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right.$, the term A.2 becomes

$$
\left(+_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)=\left(+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i,<l}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap\left(P_{J_{i}}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)\right)\right.
$$

Finally, we have demonstrated

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{rank}\left(\left[W_{i}\right]\right)= & \operatorname{rank}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)-\operatorname{rank}\left(\left(+_{k \in \mathcal{I}_{<i}^{\prime}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)\right) \\
= & \operatorname{rank}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right) \\
& -\operatorname{rank}\left(\left(+_{k \in \mathcal{J}_{i,<l}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{k}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right) \cap\left(P_{J_{i}}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)\right) \cap\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)\right)\right. \\
= & \operatorname{rank}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)-\operatorname{rank}\left(P_{J_{i}}\left(\cap_{k \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k}\right]\right)\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

It is notable that the determination of $\operatorname{rank}\left(\left[W_{i}\right]\right)$ depends only on $\mathcal{J}_{i,>l}$, that is, the set of indices $j$ such that $\left|S_{j}\right|>\left|S_{i}\right|$ and $S_{j} \cap S_{i} \neq \phi$. In other words, it does not depend on any index-sets of the same size as $S_{i}$ and their orderings.

As partially-joint score subspaces $\left[W_{i}\right]$ are constructed recursively and the determination of each $\left[W_{i}\right]$ 's rank only depends on $\mathcal{J}_{i,>l}$, not on the ordering index-sets of size $l=\left|S_{i}\right|$, we conclude that the set of pairs $\left\{\left(S_{i}, r\left(S_{i}\right)\right): i \in \mathcal{I}_{K}\right\}$ is unique.

## A.2.3 Proof of Theorem 2.2

Proof. We give a proof recursively on $l \in \mathcal{K}$. If $l=K$, there only exists $\left[W_{1}\right]=\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{1}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]$ for $S_{1}=\mathcal{K}$, so there is nothing to prove. If $l=K-1$, by absolute orthogonality, all $P_{1}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ are orthogonal each other for $i=\{2, \ldots, K+1\}$. Therefore, in determining each $\left[W_{i}\right]$ for $i=\{2, \ldots, K+1\}$, other $\left[W_{t}\right]$ for $t \in$ $\mathcal{J}_{i, 2}=\mathcal{I}_{<i} \cap\left\{i^{\prime}:\left|S_{i^{\prime}}\right|=2\right\}$ does not affect on the construction of $\left[W_{i}\right]$.

For any $l \leq K-2$, suppose the statement holds, that is, a partially-joint score subspace $\left[W_{j}\right]$ such that $\left|S_{j}\right|=l^{\prime}>l$ is uniquely determined only by $\left[W_{j^{\prime}}\right.$ ] for $S_{j^{\prime}}>S_{j}$. For each in$\operatorname{dex} i \in \mathcal{J}_{l}=\left\{i^{\prime}:\left|S_{i}\right|=l\right\}$ (regardless of ordering), we have $P_{I_{l}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)=P_{J_{i}}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ by absolute orthogonality. Then among all indices $i^{\prime} \in \mathcal{J}_{l}, P_{J_{i^{\prime}}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i^{\prime}}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ are orthogonal each other.

Suppose an ordering on the set of all index-sets of size $l$ is given, denoted by $\left(S_{i_{1}}, \ldots, S_{i_{h}}\right)$ with $h={ }_{K} C_{l}$. For $i_{1}$, [ $W_{i_{1}}$ ] is just determined as $P_{J_{i_{1}}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i_{1}}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$. Next for $i_{2}$, as $\left[W_{i_{1}}\right]$ and $P_{J_{i_{2}}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i_{2}}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ are orthogonal, we check that $P_{i_{1}}^{\perp} \circ P_{J_{i_{2}}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i_{2}}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)=$ $P_{J_{i_{2}}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i_{2}}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$. Thus $\left[W_{i_{2}}\right]$ is determined regardless of $\left[W_{i_{1}}\right]$. In recursive manner, for $i \in\left\{i_{3}, \ldots, i_{h}\right\},\left[W_{i}\right]$ is determined regardless of all $\left[W_{i^{\prime}}\right]$ for $i^{\prime} \in \mathcal{J}_{i, l}$, or in other word, is uniquely determined as $P_{J_{i}}^{\perp}\left(\cap_{k^{\prime} \in S_{i}}\left[V_{k^{\prime}}\right]\right)$ depending only on $\left[W_{j^{\prime}}\right] \mathrm{s}$ for $S_{j^{\prime}}>l$.

## A.2.4 Proof of Corollary 2.1

Proof. From the discussions of Section 2, we know that $\left[W_{(k .)}\right]$ is indeed the score subspace of $Z_{k}$ for each $k=1, \ldots, K$. Thus, given unique $\left[W_{i}\right]$ 's for $i \in \mathcal{I}_{(k)}$ from Theorem 2, the subspace [ $U_{(k), i}$ ] generated by $U_{(k), i}$ is unique.

## A.2.5 Examples

The following two examples presents the cases where relative independence is satisfied and not:

Example A.1. Let $K=3, n=4$ and

$$
V_{1}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1 \\
0 & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right), \quad V_{2}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1 / \sqrt{2} \\
0 & 1 / \sqrt{2} \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right), \quad V_{3}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 / \sqrt{2} \\
0 & 1 / \sqrt{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

then $\left[I_{1}\right]=\left[(1,0,0,0)^{T}\right]$ and $P_{I_{1}}^{\perp}\left[V_{1}\right]=\left[(0,1,0,0)^{T}\right], P_{I_{1}}^{\perp}\left[V_{2}\right]=$ $\left[(0,1 / \sqrt{2}, 1 / \sqrt{2}, 0)^{T}\right]$ and $P_{I_{1}}^{\perp}\left[V_{3}\right]=\left[(0,0,1 / \sqrt{2}, 1 / \sqrt{2})^{T}\right]$ are linearly independent. Thus $\left\{\left[V_{1}\right],\left[V_{2}\right],\left[V_{3}\right]\right\}$ is relatively independent.

Example A.2. Let $K=3, n=4$ and

$$
V_{1}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1 \\
0 & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right), \quad V_{2}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1 / \sqrt{2} \\
0 & 1 / \sqrt{2} \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right), \quad V_{3}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 1 / \sqrt{2} \\
0 & 0 & 1 / \sqrt{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

As $P_{I_{1}}^{\perp}\left[V_{3}\right] \cap\left(P_{I_{1}}^{\perp}\left[V_{1}\right]+P_{I_{1}}^{\perp}\left[V_{2}\right]\right)=\left[(0,0,1,0)^{T}\right]$ is not empty, thus $\left\{\left[V_{1}\right],\left[V_{2}\right],\left[V_{3}\right]\right\}$ is not relatively independent.

We present the following examples that support Theorem 1, that relative independence indeed guarantee the uniqueness of the brief version of partially-joint structure $\mathfrak{S}_{0}=\left\{\left(S_{i}, r\left(S_{i}\right)\right): i \in\right.$ $\left.\mathcal{I}_{K}, r\left(S_{i}\right)>0\right\}$.

Example A. 3 (cont'd from Example A.1.). Under the ordering $S_{1}=\{1,2,3\}, S_{5}=\{1\}, S_{6}=\{2\}, S_{7}=\{3\}$, we obtain $\left[W_{1}\right]=$ $\left[(1,0,0,0)^{T}\right],\left[W_{5}\right]=\left[(0,1,0,0)^{T}\right],\left[W_{6}\right]=\left[(0,0,1,0)^{T}\right]$ and $\left[W_{7}\right]=$ $\left[(0,0,0,1)^{T}\right]$. Then we have

$$
\mathfrak{S}_{0}=\{(\{1,2,3\}, 1),(\{1\}, 1),(\{2\}, 1),(\{3\}, 1)\} .
$$

On the other hand, in the case $S_{1}=\{1,2,3\}, S_{5}=\{2\}, S_{6}=$ $\{1\}, S_{7}=\{3\}$, we obtain $\left[W_{1}\right]=\left[(1,0,0,0)^{T}\right],\left[W_{5}\right]=\left[(0,1 / \sqrt{2}, 1 / \sqrt{2}, 0)^{T}\right]$, $\left[W_{6}\right]=\left[(0,-1 / \sqrt{2}, 1 / \sqrt{2}, 0)^{T}\right]$ and $\left[W_{7}\right]=\left[(0,0,0,1)^{T}\right]$. The partiallyjoint structure is still the same as above.

Example A. 4 (cont'd from Example A.2.). Under the ordering $S_{1}=\{1,2,3\}, S_{5}=\{1\}, S_{6}=\{2\}, S_{7}=\{3\}$, we obtain $\left[W_{1}\right]=$ $\left[(1,0,0,0)^{T}\right],\left[W_{5}\right]=\left[(0,1,0,0)^{T}\right],\left[W_{6}\right]=\left[(0,0,1,0)^{T}\right]$ and $\left[W_{7}\right]=$ $\left[(0,0,0,1)^{T}\right]$. The partially-joint structure is

$$
\mathfrak{S}_{0}=\{(\{1,2,3\}, 1),(\{1\}, 1),(\{2\}, 1),(\{3\}, 1)\} .
$$

On the other hand, in the case $S_{1}=\{1,2,3\}, S_{5}=\{3\}, S_{6}=$ $\{2\}, S_{7}=\{1\}$, we obtain $\left[W_{1}\right]=\left[(1,0,0,0)^{T}\right],\left[W_{5}\right]=\left[(0,1,0,0)^{T},(0,0,1 / \sqrt{2}, 1 / \sqrt{2})^{T}\right]$ $\left[W_{6}\right]=\left[(0,0,1 / \sqrt{2},-1 / \sqrt{2})^{T}\right]$ and $\left[W_{7}\right]=\{0\}$. This time, the partially-joint structure is

$$
\mathfrak{S}_{0}=\{(\{1,2,3\}, 1),(\{1\}, 0),(\{2\}, 1),(\{3\}, 2)\} .
$$

We also present the following examples that support Theorem 2 , that absolute orthogonality guarantee the uniqueness of the partially-joint score subspaces.

Example A.5. Let $K=4, n=7$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
V_{1} & =\left(\begin{array}{llllll}
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)^{T} \\
V_{2} & =\left(\begin{array}{llllll}
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)^{T} \\
V_{3} & =\left(\begin{array}{cccccc}
1 / \sqrt{2} & 1 / \sqrt{2} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)^{T} \\
V_{4} & =\left(\begin{array}{cccccc}
1 / \sqrt{2} & 1 / \sqrt{2} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)^{T}
\end{aligned}
$$

This example satisfies absolute orthogonality. Between under two orderings $\left(S_{11}=\{3,4\}, S_{12}=\{1\}, S_{13}=\{2\}\right)$ and $\left(S_{11}=\{3,4\}, S_{12}=\right.$ $\left.\{2\}, S_{13}=\{1\}\right)$, the determinations of $\left[W_{12}\right]$ and $\left[W_{13}\right]$ are the same.

Example A.6. Let $K=4, n=7$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
& V_{1}=\left(\begin{array}{llllll}
1 / 2 \sqrt{2} & \sqrt{3} / 2 \sqrt{2} & 1 / \sqrt{2} & 0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)^{T} \\
& V_{2}
\end{aligned}=\left(\begin{array}{llllll}
\sqrt{3} / 2 \sqrt{2} & 1 / 2 \sqrt{2} & 0 & 1 / \sqrt{2} & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)^{T},\left(\begin{array}{cccccc}
1 / \sqrt{2} & 1 / \sqrt{2} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0
\end{array}\right)^{T} .
$$

This example satisfies relative orthogonality, but not absolute orthogonality. Between under two orderings $\left(S_{11}=\{3,4\}, S_{12}=\right.$
$\left.\{1\}, S_{13}=\{2\}\right)$ and $\left(S_{11}=\{3,4\}, S_{12}=\{2\}, S_{13}=\{1\}\right)$, the determinations of $\left[W_{12}\right]$ and $\left[W_{13}\right]$ are not the same because $\left[V_{1}\right]$ and $\left[V_{2}\right]$ are not orthogonal and $\left[W_{11}\right]=(1 / \sqrt{2}, 1 / \sqrt{2}, 0,0,0,0)^{T}$ does not have an effect on the determination of $\left[W_{12}\right]$ and $\left[W_{13}\right]$ by definition.

## A. 3 Additional Information on Simulation Study

## A.3.1 Examples of the Measure of Dissimilarity between Two Partially-Joint Structures

For the comparison between two partially-joint structure, we devised a following concept of the measure of dissimilarity between partially-joint structures.

First, we introduce a partially-joint structure matrix $\widehat{T}$ for a (brief version of) partially-joint structure $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}$, a matrix each of whose columns indicates an identified index-set among datasets and each of whose elements show whether the corresponding dataset belongs to that index-set. For example, when $K=3$, if the estimated partially-joint structure is

$$
\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}=\{(\{1,2,3\}, 2),(\{1,2\}, 1),(\{1,3\}, 1),(\{2,3\}, 1),(\{3\}, 1)\}
$$

then

$$
\widehat{T}=\left(\begin{array}{llllll}
1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
1 & 1 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
1 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 1 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

Next, consider two partially-joint structure matrices $\widehat{T}_{1} \in\{0,1\}^{n \times m_{1}}$ and $\widehat{T}_{2} \in\{0,1\}^{n \times m_{2}}$. Discarding all the identical columns between $\widehat{T}_{1}$ and $\widehat{T}_{2}$, we denote the remaining columns $\tilde{T}_{1}$ and $\tilde{T}_{2}$. For example, from

$$
\widehat{T}_{1}=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1 \\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right], \quad \widehat{T}_{2}=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 1 & 0 \\
1 & 1 & 1 \\
1 & 1 & 1
\end{array}\right]
$$

we obtain

$$
\tilde{T}_{1}=\left[\begin{array}{l}
1 \\
1 \\
0
\end{array}\right], \quad \tilde{T}_{2}=\left[\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
1 & 1 \\
1 & 1
\end{array}\right] .
$$

For each remaining column of $\widehat{T}_{1}$ (or $\widehat{T}_{2}$ ), find the closest column of $\widehat{T}_{2}$ (or $\widehat{T}_{1}$ ) in the Frobenius norm sense. The measure of dissimilarity between $\widehat{T}_{1}$ and $\widehat{T}_{2}$ is the sum of the squares of all these Frobenius norms between the remaining columns between $\tilde{T}_{1}$ and $\tilde{T}_{2}$. In the example above, for $(1,1,0)^{T}$ of $\tilde{T}_{1}$, the closest column of $\tilde{T}_{2}$ is $(1,1,1)^{T}$ and the difference is 1 . For $(1,1,1)^{T}$ of $\tilde{T}_{2}$, the difference between $(1,1,0)^{T}$ is 1 and for $(0,1,1)^{T}$ of $\tilde{T}_{2}$, it is 2 . The overall difference between $\widehat{T}_{1}$ and $\widehat{T}_{2}$ is then $1^{2}+1^{2}+2^{2}=6$. The measure of dissimilarity between two partially-joint structure matrix $\widehat{T}_{1}$ and $\widehat{T}_{2}$ is denoted $\operatorname{diff}\left(\widehat{T}_{1}, \widehat{T}_{2}\right)$.

Finally, if the partially-joint structure $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0,1}$ (or $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0,2}$ ) has partiallyjoint structure matrices $\widehat{T}_{1}$ (or $\widehat{T}_{2}$ ), then the measure of dissimilarity between $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0,1}$ and $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0,2}$ is $\operatorname{diff}\left(\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0,1}, \widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0,2}\right)=\operatorname{diff}\left(\widehat{T}_{1}, \widehat{T}_{2}\right)$.

## A.3.2 Review on Methodology of Other Methods

We briefly review the methodology of AJIVE (Feng et al.,2018), SLIDE (Gaynanova and Li,2019), COBS (Gao et al.,2020) and JIVE (Lock et al.,2013).

AJIVE In AJIVE, each signal matrix $Z_{k} \in \mathbb{R}^{p_{k} \times n}$ is regarded as a sum of joint structure $J_{k}$ and individual structure $I_{k}$ for $k=1, \ldots, K$. A joint structure $J_{k}$ is viewed as the score subspace $\left[V_{M}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ shared by all $Z_{i}$ 's.

AJIVE extracts each estimated signal matrix $\widehat{Z}_{k}$ from dataset $X_{k}$ and $\widehat{Z}_{k}$ is of initial rank estimate $\widetilde{r}_{k}$. The estimated shared joint component $\left[\widehat{V}_{M}\right]$ is obtained as a flag mean among score subspaces of $\widehat{Z}_{k}$ 's, or $\left[\widehat{V}_{1}\right], \ldots,\left[\widehat{V}_{k}\right]$, in a sense of the projection Frobenius norm distance as our method. The rank $r_{J}$ of $\left[\widehat{V}_{M}\right]$ (called the joint rank) is estimated using the simulated distribution of the largest singular value of the concatenated matrix of random directions and that of Wedin bounds:
(1) If the largest squared singular value of the column concatenation matrix $\widehat{V}$ of $\widehat{V}_{k}$ 's is larger than the 5 th percentile of the simulated distribution of the largest squared singular value of the concatenation matrix of random orthogonal matrices of the same size as $\widehat{V}_{k}$ 's (or random direction bound), then $\left[\widehat{V}_{M}\right.$ ] is not generated by noise in 95 percent of probability.
(2) If there are $\widehat{r}_{J}$ squared singular values of $\widehat{V}$ are larger than the 95 th percentile of the simulated distribution of Wedin bounds, then the first $\widehat{r}_{J}$ right singular vectors are used as the basis for the estimated joint score subspace $\left[\widehat{V}_{M}\right]$.

The estimated joint structure $\widehat{J_{k}}$ is a projection of the dataset $X_{k}$ onto the estimated joint score subspace $\left[\widehat{V}_{M}\right.$ ], that is, $\widehat{J}_{k}=$ $X_{k} \widehat{V}_{M} \widehat{V}_{M}^{T}$. Each estimated individual structure $\widehat{I}_{k}$ is obtained as $X_{k} \cdot\left(I-\widehat{V}_{M} \widehat{V}_{M}^{T}\right)$. The row spaces of each estimated individual structure $\widehat{I}_{k}$ is orthogonal to $\left[\widehat{V}_{M}\right]$. There is no guarantee that individual structures are mutually orthogonal. The joint score matrix is just defined as $\widehat{V}_{M}$ and the corresponding joint loading matrix for $k$ th data source is a regression of $\widehat{J}_{k}$ on $\widehat{V}_{M}^{T}$, computed as $\widehat{J}_{k} \cdot \widehat{V}_{M}$. The
individual loading and score matrices are obtained from SVDs of $\widehat{I}_{k}$ 's.

SLIDE SLIDE identifies the partially-joint structure with the penalized matrix factorization, that is,

$$
(\widetilde{U}, \widetilde{V})=\underset{U, V}{\arg \min } \sum_{k=1}^{K} \frac{1}{2}\left\|X_{k}-U_{k} V^{T}\right\|_{F}^{2}+\lambda \sum_{j=1}^{r}\left\|U_{k j}\right\|_{2} \quad \text { s.t. } \quad V^{T} V=I
$$

where $U_{k j}$ is the $j$ th column of the loading matrix $U_{k}$ of $X_{k}$ and $r$ is the number of all possible sparsity patterns. After computing $\widetilde{U}$ and $\widetilde{V}$ with an iterative algorithm, the corresponding structure matrix $\widehat{T}$ is obtained from the sparse structure of $\widetilde{U}$. Note that the concept of the structure matrix $\widehat{T}$ here is identical to the partially-joint structure matrix of ours in Section B.1. Even though this optimization problem is nonconvex and there is no guarantee about convergence to the global optimum, authors reported that a local solution can be obtained heuristically by initializaing $V$ with the left singular matrix of concatenated $X$ that works well in the simulation.

Then SLIDE estimate the loading and score matrices, $\widehat{U}$ and $\widehat{V}$, for the structure $\widehat{T}$ by solving the following optimization problem with an iterative algorithm,

$$
(\widehat{U}, \widehat{V})=\underset{U, V}{\arg \min }\left\|X-U V^{T}\right\|_{F}^{2} \quad \text { s.t. } \quad V^{T} V=I
$$

with the constraint that the loading $U$ has the same sparsity structure as $\widehat{T}$.

In model validation, SLIDE adapt the block cross validation (BCV) procedure to select the best structure $\widehat{T}_{\text {best }}$. BCV splits rows and columns of each dataset $X_{k}$ into submatrices $X_{k}^{11}, X_{k}^{12}, \ldots, X_{k}^{21}, \ldots$.

Then it holds out a set of submatrices $X^{i j}=\left[X_{1}^{i j}, X_{2}^{i j}, \ldots, X_{K}^{i j}\right]$ of the same sub-block position in each dataset $X_{k}$ and evaluate the prediction error on $X^{i j}$,s. Given a set of structure candidates $\widehat{T}_{1}, \widehat{T}_{2}, \ldots$, we select one that minimizes the error across all folds.

JIVE Like in AJIVE, JIVE decompose each signal matrix $X_{i}$ as a sum of joint structure $J_{i}$ and individual structure $I_{i}$, for $i=1, \ldots, K$. After defining $R$ to be a row concatenation of $R_{i}=X_{i}-J_{i}-I_{i}$, JIVE estimate both joint and individual structures by minimizing $\|R\|_{F}^{2}$ under the given ranks. An alternating iterative algorithm is implemented for the estimation finding individual component with given joint component at one step and vice versa at another step. The estimated joint structure is identical to the first $r_{J}$ terms in the SVD of $X$ with individual components removed and the estimated individual structures to the first $r_{i}$ terms in the SVD of $X_{i}$ with the joint component removed. The selection of $r_{J}$ and $r_{i}$ s are validated using the permutation test.

COBS COBS iteratively estimates a sequence of loading vectors, $u_{i}$ for $i=1, \ldots, r$ for given $r$, while updating the data matrix $X=\left[X_{1}, \ldots, X_{k}\right] \in \mathbb{R}^{n \times \sum p_{k}}$. The algorithm starts with $X^{[0]}=X$. At the $i$ th step, with the current data matrix $X^{[i-1]}$, the $i$ th loading vector $u_{i}$ is estimated solving the following maximization problem, that is,

$$
\widetilde{u}_{i}=\max _{u}\left\|\left(X^{[i-1]}\right)^{T} u\right\|_{2}^{2} \quad \text { s.t. } u^{T} u=1
$$

As each $u_{i}$ is equipped with block structure $u_{i}=\left(u_{(1)}^{T} \ldots u_{(K)}^{T}\right)^{T}$, we can give sparsity at two levels of thresholding, one for blockwise sparsity and the other for overall sparsity in estimating $\widetilde{u}_{i}$. The tuning parameters $\alpha_{v} \in[0,1]$ and $\lambda_{v} \geq 0$ control the two
levels of sparsity respectively, and $\widehat{u}$ is thresholded as a normalized solution of

$$
\min _{x} \frac{1}{2}\left\|x-\widetilde{u}_{i}\right\|^{2}+\gamma_{1}\|x\|_{1}+\gamma_{2}\|x\|_{2,1}
$$

where $\gamma_{1}=\alpha_{v} \lambda_{v}$ and $\gamma_{2}=\left(1-\alpha_{v}\right) \lambda_{v}$. Then the score vector $v_{i}$ is estimated as the empirical BLUP and dataset $X^{[i-1]}$ is updated as $X^{[i]}=X^{[i-1]}-\widehat{u}_{i} \widehat{v}^{T}$.

## A.3.3 Results on Tuning Parameter Selection

We report the performances of our tuning parameter selection procedure of Section 2.3.3 using the six models given in Section 2.5. Since the tuning parameter $\lambda$ represents a threshold for principal angles, the candidates for $\lambda$ are given by $\lambda=0^{\circ}, 1^{\circ}, \ldots, 90^{\circ}$. For each value of $\lambda$, we evaluated the empirical risk. As discussed in Section 2.3.3, we take the parameter $\tilde{\lambda}$ that gives the smallest empirical risk and also compare $\operatorname{diff}\left(\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{0} ; \widehat{Z}_{t r}\right), \widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}(\lambda ; \widehat{Z})\right)$ as a function of $\lambda$. We also present $\operatorname{diff}\left(\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}(\lambda, \widehat{Z}), \mathfrak{S}_{0}\right)$, which reflects how much the estimated structure differs from the true structure on each value of angle threshold, under the situation where the true structure ('oracle') is known.

When $\operatorname{SNR}=10$, getnfrac function estimated true signal ranks correctly for models 1 to 5 . The empirical risk is minimized at an interval of $\lambda$ 's, and for any $\lambda$ in the interval, the corresponding structure $\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}$ matches the true $\mathfrak{S}_{0}$; the valley bottoms of empirical risk (solid line) are posited inside those of the measure of dissimilarity (dashed line) with value zero, as seen in Fig. A.3.1. For each model in the figure, solid line (empirical risk) shows a similar shape as dashed line (the measure of dissimilarity), which implies that empirical risk well reflects the difference between the estimated structure and the true structure. In Model 6 , the true signal rank is 8 for each dataset, for instance, from $\{(\{1,2,3\}, 2),(\{1,2\}, 2),(\{1,3\}, 2),(\{1\}, 2)\}$ in the case $X_{1}$. However, getnfrac function only estimated $r_{1}=8, r_{2}=8$ and $r_{3}=7$. The estimated partially-joint structure lacks $(\{3\}, 1)$ from the true structure.


Figure A.3.1: The values of empirical risk (solid) and $\operatorname{diff}\left(\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}\left(\tilde{\lambda}_{0} ; \widehat{Z}_{t r}\right), \widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}(\lambda ; \widehat{Z})\right)(\operatorname{dotted}), \operatorname{diff}\left(\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}(\lambda, \widehat{Z}), \mathfrak{S}_{0}\right),($ dashed $)$.

When the signal-to-noise ratio is small, $\mathrm{SNR}=2$, getnfrac function estimated signal ranks as zero for all six cases, so we give the true inherent signal ranks instead. Unfortunately, the empirical risk is minimized at smaller values of $\lambda$ than desired; see Fig.A.3.2. Unlike Fig. A.3.1, solid line (empirical risk) shows a far different shape than dashed line (the measure of dissimilarity), except for Model 1, which implies that empirical risks fail to detect the true structure. This is due to the lower value of SNR, with which the magnitude of noise overwhelms that of signal. As the score vectors of each dataset have almost random directions in low SNRs, there is a tendency that signals from a partially-joint (and fully-joint) scores are counted separately as if they belong to individual data blocks.


Figure A.3.2: The values of penalized empirical risk for $\lambda$ when $n=200$ and $\mathrm{SNR}=2$. The values of empirical risk (solid line) and the measure of dissimilarity, $\operatorname{diff}\left(\widehat{\mathfrak{S}}_{0}(\lambda, \widehat{Z}), \mathfrak{S}_{0}\right)$, (dashed line) over varying $\lambda$ are shown.

## A.3.4 Simulation Settings for Section 2.5.3

In the unbalance of signal strength between joint and individual component settings, we set $n=200$ and $K=3$.

In the first case, we set the elements of $\sigma_{M}^{2}$ as
(1) Joint $\left(S_{1}\right):(15,14.5, \ldots, 5.5)$,
(2) Individual $1\left(S_{2}\right):(0.150,0.141,0.132, \ldots, 0.069)$,
(3) Individual $2\left(S_{3}\right):(0.147,0.138,0.129, \ldots, 0.066)$,
(4) Individual $3\left(S_{4}\right):(0.144,0.135,0.126, \ldots, 0.063)$,
so the strength of joint signals are about 100 times stronger than those of individual signals.

In the second case case, we set the elements of $\sigma_{M}^{2}$ as
(1) Joint $\left(S_{1}\right):(0.15,0.145, \ldots, 0.055)$,
(2) Individual $1\left(S_{2}\right):(15,14.1,13.2, \ldots, 6.9)$,
(3) Individual $2\left(S_{3}\right):(14.7,13.8,12.9, \ldots, 6.6)$,
(4) Individual $3\left(S_{4}\right):(14.4,13.5,12.6, \ldots, 6.3)$,
so the strength of individual signals are about 100 times stronger that those of joint signals.

## A. 4 Additional Information on Real Data Analysis

Table A.4.1: Fisher's exact tests between gene mutations/chromosome defects and the CLL subgroups, $\alpha$ and $\beta$ with top 5 adjested p-values (Benjamini-Hochberg method).

| Gene mutation/Chromosome defect | adjusted p-value |
| :---: | :---: |
| IGHV | $\mathbf{1 . 0 3 6} \times \mathbf{1 0}^{\mathbf{- 1 3}}$ |
| MED12 | 0.173 |
| del17p13 | 0.174 |
| del13q14 | 0.178 |
| TP53 | 0.184 |

Table A.4.2: The association between IGHV mutation status and the CLL subgroups with adjusted p-value ( 9 missing values excluded).

| Mutation \Subgroup | $\alpha$ | $\beta$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| IGHV Wild type | 49 | 8 |
| IGHV Mutated | 7 | 48 |

Table A.4.3: The most appeared drugs in the subgroups [a] and [b] with appearances at least four times out of 5 concentrations.

| The most appeared drugs in subgroup [a] |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Drug name | Target pathway | Appearances |
| spebrutinib | BTK | 5 |
| idelalisib | PI3K delta | 5 |
| duvelisib | PI3K gamma, PI3K delta | 5 |
| tamatinib | SYK | 5 |
| dasatinib | ABL1, KIT, LYN, PDGFRA, PDGFRB, SRC | 5 |
| PF 477736 | CHK1, CHK2 | 5 |
| MK-2206 | AKT1/2 (PKB) | 5 |
| ibrutinib | BTK | 4 |
| selumetinib | MEK1/2 | 4 |
| PRT062607 HCL | SYK | 4 |
| AZD7762 | CHK1/2 | 4 |
| CCT241533 | CHK2 | 4 |
| TAE684 | ALK | 4 |
| MK-1775 | WEE1 | 4 |
| AT13387 | HSP90 | 4 |


| The most appeared drugs in the subgroup [b] |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| Drug name | Target pathway | Appearances |
| everolimus | mTOR | 5 |
| thapsigargin | SERCA | 5 |
| orlistat | LPL | 5 |
| rotenone | Electron transport chain in mitochondria | 5 |
| afatinib | EGFR, ERBB2 | 4 |
| fludarabine | Purine analogue | 4 |
| navitoclax | BCL2, BCL-XL, BCL-W | 4 |

## Appendix B

## Supplementary Materials for Chapter 3

## B. 1 Proofs

## B.1.1 Proof of Lemma 3.1

Proof. Suppose we have any $p_{1}=\left[v_{1}, r_{1}\right]$ and $p_{2}=\left[v_{2}, r_{2}\right] \in \Theta$. First, it is easy to check that $d\left(p_{1}, p_{1}\right)=0$. The non-negativity and symmetry of $d$ are trivial.

We show a triangle inequality. Let $p_{3}=\left[v_{3}, r_{3}\right]$ be any point in $\Theta$. By the spherical triangle inequality [Ramsay and Richtmyer, 1995], we have $\arccos \left(v_{1}, v_{2}\right) \leq \arccos \left(v_{1}, v_{3}\right)+\arccos \left(v_{2}, v_{3}\right)$.

SEOUL NATONAL LNNERSTY

Without loss of generality, $d_{1}\left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right) \leq d_{2}\left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right)$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
d_{1}\left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right) & =\left(\arccos ^{2}\left(v_{1}^{T} v_{2}\right)+\left|r_{1}-r_{3}+r_{3}-r_{2}\right|^{2}\right)^{1 / 2} \\
& \leq\left(\left(\arccos \left(v_{1}^{T} v_{3}\right)+\arccos \left(v_{2}^{T} v_{3}\right)\right)^{2}+\left(\left|r_{1}-r_{3}\right|+\left|r_{3}-r_{2}\right|\right)^{2}\right)^{1 / 2} \\
& \leq\left(\arccos ^{2}\left(v_{1}^{T} v_{3}\right)+\left|r_{1}-r_{3}\right|^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}+\left(\arccos ^{2}\left(v_{2}^{T} v_{3}\right)+\left|r_{2}-r_{3}\right|^{2}\right)^{1 / 2} \\
& =d_{1}\left(p_{1}, p_{3}\right)+d_{1}\left(p_{2}, p_{3}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
d_{2}\left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right) & =\left(\arccos ^{2}\left(-v_{1}^{T} v_{2}\right)+\left|r_{1}-\left(\pi-r_{2}\right)\right|^{2}\right)^{1 / 2} \\
& \leq\left(\left(\arccos \left(v_{1}^{T} v_{3}\right)+\arccos \left(-v_{2}^{T} v_{3}\right)\right)^{2}+\left(\left|r_{1}-r_{3}\right|+\left|\pi-r_{3}-r_{2}\right|\right)^{2}\right)^{1 / 2} \\
& =d_{1}\left(p_{1}, p_{3}\right)+d_{2}\left(p_{2}, p_{3}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

or $d_{1}\left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right) \leq d_{1}\left(p_{1}, p_{3}\right)+d_{2}\left(p_{2}, p_{3}\right)$. In a similar way,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& d_{1}\left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right) \leq d_{2}\left(p_{1}, p_{3}\right)+d_{2}\left(p_{2}, p_{3}\right) \\
& d_{1}\left(p_{1}, p_{2}\right) \leq d_{2}\left(p_{1}, p_{3}\right)+d_{1}\left(p_{2}, p_{3}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

## B.1.2 Proof of Proposition 3.1

Proof. If $E$ is empty, it is trivial. In the case $E$ non-empty, we first show (BPC) implies (ZC). Let $B_{n}=\cup_{k=n}^{\infty} E_{k}$ and $B=\cap_{n=1}^{\infty} \overline{B_{n}}$. By (BPC), there is a sufficiently large $n$ such that $d\left(p_{n}, E\right) \leq \epsilon$ for any $p_{n} \in B_{n}$, that is, there exists $q \in E$ with $d(p, q) \leq \epsilon$.

Given $p \in B$, we can find $p_{N} \in B_{n}$ for sufficiently large $N$ such that $d\left(p_{N}, p\right) \leq \epsilon$ and $d(p, E) \leq \epsilon$. Then $d(p, E)=\inf _{q \in E} d(p, q) \leq$ $d\left(p_{n}, p\right)+\inf _{q \in E} d\left(p_{N}, q\right) \leq 2 \epsilon$. Since $E$ is a closed set, $p \in E$ as $\epsilon \rightarrow 0$. This proves (ZC).

We next show (ZC) implies (BPC). Consider a sequence $p_{n} \in$ $E_{n}$ such that $p_{n}=\arg \max _{p \in E_{n}} d(p, E)$ and let $r_{n}=\max _{p \in E_{n}} d(p, E)$. Then we have either $r_{n} \rightarrow 0$ or $r_{n} \nrightarrow 0$. If $r_{n} \rightarrow 0$, then (BPC) holds. In the case $r_{n} \nrightarrow 0$, there exists a sequence $n(k)$ such that $r_{n(k)} \geq r_{0}>0$. If $p_{n(k)}$ has an accumulation point $p^{\prime}$, then $d\left(p^{\prime}, E\right)>0$, which leads to a contradiction to (ZC). Thus $p_{n(k)}$ has no accumulation point.

As $\Theta$ is compact and thus totally bounded, we can find a finite cover $\left\{A_{j}\right\}$ of $\Theta$ such that $\operatorname{diam}\left(A_{j}\right)=\epsilon$ for any small $\epsilon>0$. Since there is no accumulation point, each $A_{j}$ contains only finitely many $p_{n(k)}$. However, this is contradict to the existence of the subsequence $p_{n(k)}$.

## B.1.3 Proof of Theorem 3.1

Proof. Let $\Delta\left(x, p_{1}, p_{2}\right)=\rho\left(x, p_{1}\right)-\rho\left(x, p_{2}\right)$ for $x \in S^{m}$ and $p_{1}, p_{2} \in$ $\Theta$. Under uniform continuity, for every $p \in \Theta$ and $\epsilon>0$, there exists $\delta>0$ such that $\left|\Delta\left(X, p, p^{\prime}\right)\right|<\epsilon$ a.s. whenever $d\left(p, p^{\prime}\right)<\delta$.

For $\omega \in \Omega$ and $p=[v, r] \in \Theta$, denote

$$
\begin{aligned}
& F_{n}(p)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{i}(\omega), p\right)^{2}+j_{\tau}(r), \\
& F(p)=\mathbb{E}\left(\rho(X, p)^{2}\right)+j_{\tau}(r), \\
& \ell_{n}=\inf _{p \in \Theta} F_{n}(p), \quad \ell=\inf _{p \in \Theta} F(p), \\
& E_{n}^{\tau}=\left\{p \in \Theta: F_{n}(p)=\ell_{n}\right\}, \quad E^{\tau}=\{p \in \Theta: F(p)=\ell\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $\left\{p_{1}, p_{2}, \ldots\right\} \subset \Theta$ be dense. For each $k=1,2, \ldots$, given $p_{k}=\left[v_{k}, r_{k}\right]$, we have $F_{n}\left(p_{k}\right) \rightarrow F\left(p_{k}\right)$ almost surely by the Strong

Law of Large Numbers. We put this in another way as follows. Let $A_{k}=\left\{\omega: F_{n}\left(p_{k}\right) \rightarrow F\left(p_{k}\right), n \rightarrow \infty\right\} \subset \Omega$, then $\mathcal{P}\left(A_{k}\right)=1$. With $A=\cap_{k=1}^{\infty} A_{k}$, we have $\mathcal{P}(A)=1$ and

$$
F_{n}\left(p_{k}\right) \rightarrow F\left(p_{k}\right)
$$

for all $\omega \in A$ and each $k=1,2, \ldots$
For any $p=[v, r], p^{\prime}=\left[v^{\prime}, r^{\prime}\right] \in \Theta$, we check

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|F_{n}\left(p^{\prime}\right)-F_{n}(p)\right| \leq & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(\rho\left(X_{i}, p^{\prime}\right)+\rho\left(X_{i}, p\right)\right)\left|\rho\left(X_{i}, p^{\prime}\right)-\rho\left(X_{i}, p\right)\right| \\
& +\left|j_{\tau}\left(r^{\prime}\right)-j_{\tau}(r)\right| \\
= & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(2 \rho\left(X_{i}, p^{\prime}\right)+\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p, p^{\prime}\right)\right|\right)\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p, p^{\prime}\right)\right| \\
& +\left|j_{\tau}\left(r^{\prime}\right)-j_{\tau}(r)\right| \tag{B.1}
\end{align*}
$$

By plugging $p_{k}=\left[v_{k}, r_{k}\right]$ into $p^{\prime}$ in B.1),

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{j}, p_{k}\right)^{2}+j_{\tau}\left(r_{k}\right)-\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(2 \rho\left(X_{i}, p_{k}\right)+\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p, p_{k}\right)\right|\right)\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p, p_{k}\right)\right| \\
& \quad-\left|j_{\tau}\left(p_{k}\right)-j_{\tau}(p)\right| \leq \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{i}, p\right)^{2}+j_{\tau}(p) \leq \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{i}, p_{k}\right)^{2}+j_{\tau}\left(r_{k}\right) \\
& \quad+\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(2 \rho\left(X_{i}, p_{k}\right)+\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p, p_{k}\right)\right|\right)\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p, p_{k}\right)\right|+\left|j_{\tau}\left(r_{k}\right)-j_{\tau}(r)\right| .
\end{aligned}
$$

We now consider a situation $p_{k} \rightarrow p$ as $k \rightarrow \infty$ for any $p \in \Theta$. Then for arbitrary $\epsilon, \epsilon^{\prime}>0$, there exists a sufficiently large $k_{0}$ such that for $k>k_{0}$, (a) by uniform continuity, $\left|\Delta\left(X_{j}, p, p_{k}\right)\right|<\epsilon$, (b) $\left|j_{\tau}\left(r_{k}\right)-j_{\tau}(r)\right|<\epsilon^{\prime}$ by (P2) and (P3). As $n \rightarrow \infty$, we also have (c) $\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{j}, p_{k}\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{E} \rho\left(X, p_{k}\right)^{2}$ by the Strong Law of Large

Numbers. Combining (a)-(c),

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{E} \rho\left(X, p_{k}\right)^{2}+j_{\tau}\left(r_{k}\right)-\left(2 \mathbb{E} \rho\left(X, p_{k}\right)+\epsilon\right) \epsilon-\epsilon^{\prime} \\
& \quad \leq \liminf _{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{i}, p\right)^{2}+j_{\tau}(r) \leq \limsup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{i}, p\right)^{2}+j_{\tau}(r) \\
& \quad \leq \mathbb{E} \rho\left(X_{j}, p_{k}\right)^{2}+j_{\tau}\left(r_{k}\right)+\left(2 \mathbb{E} \pi\left(X_{i}, p_{k}\right)+\epsilon\right) \epsilon+\epsilon^{\prime}
\end{aligned}
$$

Sending $\epsilon, \epsilon^{\prime} \rightarrow 0$ and $n \rightarrow \infty$, as $\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{i}, p\right)^{2}$ and $j_{\tau}(r)$ are bounded above and below, for any subsequence $p_{k_{s}} \rightarrow p$, we have

$$
\lim _{s \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{E} \rho\left(X, p_{k_{s}}\right)^{2}+j_{\tau}\left(r_{k_{s}}\right)=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{i}, p\right)^{2}+j_{\tau}(r)
$$

Thus, for all $\omega \in A$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{n}(p) \rightarrow F(p) \tag{B.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, plugging $p_{k}$ into $p$ and $p$ into $p^{\prime}$ in (B.1),

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|F_{n}\left(p_{n}\right)-F_{n}(p)\right| \leq & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(2 \rho\left(X_{i}, p\right)+\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p_{n}, p\right)\right|\right)\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p_{n}, p\right)\right| \\
& +\left|j_{\tau}\left(r^{\prime}\right)-j_{\tau}(r)\right| \rightarrow 0
\end{aligned}
$$

by (a) and (b). Thus $\left|F_{n}\left(p_{n}\right)-F(p)\right| \leq\left|F_{n}\left(p_{n}\right)-F_{n}(p)\right|+\mid F_{n}(p)-$ $F(p) \mid \rightarrow 0$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{n}\left(p_{n}\right) \rightarrow F(p) \tag{B.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all sequences $p_{n} \rightarrow p$ and $\omega \in A$.
Finally, we assert the theorem.

- When $\cap_{n=1}^{\infty} \overline{\bigcup_{k=n}^{\infty} E_{n}^{\tau}}=\phi$ : trivial
- When $\cap_{n=1}^{\infty} \overline{\cup_{k=n}^{\infty} E_{n}^{\tau}} \neq \phi$ : Denote $B_{n}=\cup_{k=n}^{\infty} E_{k}^{\tau}$. Let $\left\{b_{n} \in\right.$ $\left.B_{n}\right\}$ be a sequence such that $b_{n} \rightarrow b \in \cap_{n=1}^{\infty} \overline{B_{n}}$. For each $n$, we can find an index $k_{n}$ such that $b_{n} \in E_{k_{n}}^{\tau}$. We want to show that $b \in E^{\tau}$.

By (B.3), $\ell_{k_{n}}=F_{k_{n}}\left(p_{k_{n}}\right) \rightarrow F(b) \geq \ell$. At the same time, by (B.2), for any arbitrary $q \in \Theta$, there exists a sequence $\epsilon_{n} \rightarrow 0$ such that $F(q) \geq F_{n}(q)-\epsilon_{n} \geq \ell_{n}-\epsilon_{n}$. Then $\inf _{q \in \Theta} F(q)=$ $\ell \geq \lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \ell_{n}$ and we conclude $\ell_{n} \rightarrow \ell=F(b)$.

## B.1.4 Proof of Theorem 3.2

Proof. We first introduce the concept of epi-convergence (Rockafellar and Wets,1998).

Definition B.1. Consider arbitrary functions $h$ and $\left\{h_{k}\right\}$ defined on a metric space $(\Theta, d)$ to $\mathbb{R}$ for $k=1,2, \ldots$. The sequence $\left\{h_{k}\right\}$ epi-converges to $h$ at $p \in \Theta$ if and only if
(1) for every sequence $q_{k} \rightarrow q \in \Theta$, $\liminf _{k \rightarrow \infty} h_{k}\left(q_{k}\right) \geq h(q)$
(2) there exists a sequence $q_{k} \rightarrow q \in \Theta, \lim \sup _{k \rightarrow \infty} h_{k}\left(q_{k}\right) \leq$ $h(q)$.

Our first aim is to assure that, for $p=(v, r)$, the function $f_{\tau_{k}}(p)=\mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, p)+j_{\tau}(r)$ epi-converges to $f_{0}(p)=\mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, p)$. To show epi-convergence, we utilize the following proposition, see Proposition 7.15 of Rockafellar and Wets (1998) or Royset (2018).

Proposition B.1. Let a function $h$ and a sequence of functions $h_{k}$ for $k=1,2, \ldots$ be on a metric space $(\Theta, d)$ to $\mathbb{R}$. If $\left\{h_{k}\right\}$ are
continuous and converges uniformly to $h$, then $\left\{h_{k}\right\}$ epi-converges to $f$.

By definition, $f_{\tau_{k}}(p)$ are continuous on $p=[v, r] \in \Theta$. Also $\left\{f_{\tau_{k}}\right\}$ uniformly converges to $f_{0}$, since for all $p \in \Theta$,

$$
\left|f_{\tau_{k}}(p)-f_{0}(p)\right|=\left|\rho_{\tau_{k}}(r)\right| \rightarrow 0
$$

as $k \rightarrow \infty$ by ( P 4 ). Thus, $\left\{f_{\tau_{k}}\right\}$ epi-converges to $f_{0}$.
Before going into the next step, we define the following set, the population solution set inflated by $\epsilon>0$. Given $\tau \geq 0$ and $\epsilon>0$, $E^{\tau, \epsilon}=\left\{p \in \Theta: \mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, p)+j_{\tau}(p) \leq \epsilon+\inf _{q \in \Theta} \mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, q)+j_{\tau}(q)\right\}$.

Our second aim is to show, given any decreasing sequence $\epsilon_{k} \rightarrow$ $0, E^{\tau_{k}, \epsilon_{k}}$ converges to $E$ in outer limit. We use the following fact, see Theorem 7.31 of Rockafellar and Wets (1998).

Proposition B.2. Let a function $h$ and a sequence of functions $h_{k}, k=1,2, \ldots$ be defined on a metric space $(\Theta, d)$ to $\mathbb{R}$. Suppose $\left\{h_{k}\right\}$ epi-converges to $h$ with $-\infty<\inf h<\infty$. Let $\epsilon_{k} \rightarrow 0$ be a decreasing sequence and set $B_{k}^{\epsilon}=\left\{p \in \Theta: h_{k}(p) \leq \epsilon+\inf h_{k}\right\}$ and $B=\{p \in \Theta: \inf h\}$. Then $B_{k}^{\epsilon}$ converges to $B$ in outer limit as $k \rightarrow \infty$.

In our case, as $-\infty<0 \leq \mathbb{E}_{X} \rho^{2}(X, p) \leq \pi^{2} / 4<\infty$, we have $E^{\tau_{k}, \epsilon_{k}}$ converges to $E$ in outer limit as $k \rightarrow \infty$.

From the fact $E^{\tau_{k}} \subset E^{\tau_{k}, \epsilon_{k}}$, it is easily derived that $\cap_{n=1}^{\infty} \overline{\cup_{k=n}^{\infty} E^{\tau_{k}}} \subset$ $\cap_{n=1}^{\infty} \overline{\bigcup_{k=n}^{\infty} E^{\tau_{k}, \epsilon_{k}}}$. Therefore, we conclude that $E^{\tau_{k}}$ converges to $E$ in outer limit as $k \rightarrow \infty$.

## B.1.5 Proof of Theorem 3.3

Proof. Let $\Delta\left(x, p_{1}, p_{2}\right)=\rho\left(x, p_{1}\right)-\rho\left(x, p_{2}\right)$ for $x \in S^{m}$ and $p_{1}, p_{2} \in$ $\Theta$. Under uniform continuity, for every $p \in \Theta$ and $\epsilon>0$, there exists $\delta>0$ such that $\left|\Delta\left(X, p, p^{\prime}\right)\right|<\epsilon$ a.s. whenever $d\left(p, p^{\prime}\right)<\delta$.

For $\omega \in \Omega$ and $p=[v, r] \in \Theta$, denote

$$
\begin{aligned}
& F_{n}^{\tau}(p)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{i}(\omega), p\right)^{2}+j_{\tau}(r), \\
& F_{n}(p)=\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{i}(\omega), p\right)^{2}, \\
& F(p)=\mathbb{E}\left(\rho(X, p)^{2}\right), \\
& \ell_{n}=\inf _{p \in \Theta} F_{n}(p), \quad \ell=\inf _{p \in \Theta} F(p), \\
& E_{n}^{\tau}=\left\{p \in \Theta: F_{n}(p)=\ell_{n}\right\}, \quad E^{\tau}=\{p \in \Theta: F(p)=\ell\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $\left\{p_{1}, p_{2}, \ldots\right\} \subset \Theta$ be dense. For each $k=1,2, \ldots$, given $p_{k}=\left[v_{k}, r_{k}\right]$, we have $F_{n}\left(p_{k}\right) \rightarrow F\left(p_{k}\right)$ almost surely as $n \rightarrow \infty$ by the Strong Law of Large Numbers. By (P4), we also have $j_{\tau_{n}}\left(r_{k}\right) \rightarrow$ 0 monotonically as $n \rightarrow \infty$. By the continuous mapping theorem, combining two results, for each $p_{k}, F_{n}^{\tau_{n}}\left(p_{k}\right) \rightarrow F\left(p_{k}\right)$ almost surely as $n \rightarrow \infty$. We put this as follows. Let $A_{k}=\left\{\omega: F_{n}^{\tau_{n}}\left(p_{k}\right) \rightarrow\right.$ $\left.F\left(p_{k}\right), n \rightarrow \infty\right\} \subset \Omega$, then $\mathcal{P}\left(A_{k}\right)=1$. With $A=\cap_{k=1}^{\infty} A_{k}$, we have $\mathcal{P}(A)=1$ and

$$
F_{n}\left(p_{k}\right) \rightarrow F\left(p_{k}\right)
$$

for all $\omega \in A$ and each $k=1,2, \ldots$

For any $p=[v, r], p^{\prime}=\left[v^{\prime}, r^{\prime}\right] \in \Theta$, we check

$$
\begin{align*}
\left|F_{n}^{\tau_{n}}\left(p^{\prime}\right)-F_{n}^{\tau_{n}}(p)\right| \leq & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(\rho\left(X_{i}, p^{\prime}\right)+\rho\left(X_{i}, p\right)\right)\left|\rho\left(X_{i}, p^{\prime}\right)-\rho\left(X_{i}, p\right)\right| \\
& +\left|j_{\tau_{n}}\left(r^{\prime}\right)-j_{\tau_{n}}(r)\right| \\
= & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(2 \rho\left(X_{i}, p^{\prime}\right)+\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p, p^{\prime}\right)\right|\right)\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p, p^{\prime}\right)\right| \\
& +\left|j_{\tau_{n}}\left(r^{\prime}\right)-j_{\tau_{n}}(r)\right| . \tag{B.4}
\end{align*}
$$

By plugging $p_{k}=\left[v_{k}, r_{k}\right]$ into $p^{\prime}$ in B.4,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{j}, p_{k}\right)^{2}+j_{\tau_{n}}\left(r_{k}\right)-\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(2 \rho\left(X_{i}, p_{k}\right)+\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p, p_{k}\right)\right|\right)\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p, p_{k}\right)\right| \\
& \quad-\left|j_{\tau_{n}}\left(p_{k}\right)-j_{\tau_{n}}(p)\right| \leq \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{j}, p\right)^{2}+j_{\tau_{n}}(p) \leq \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{j}, p_{k}\right)^{2}+j_{\tau_{n}}\left(r_{k}\right) \\
& \quad+\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(2 \rho\left(X_{i}, p_{k}\right)+\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p, p_{k}\right)\right|\right)\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p, p_{k}\right)\right|+\left|j_{\tau_{n}}\left(r_{k}\right)-j_{\tau_{n}}(r)\right| .
\end{aligned}
$$

We now consider a situation $p_{k} \rightarrow p \in \Theta$ as $k \rightarrow \infty$ for some $p$. Then for arbitrary $\epsilon, \epsilon^{\prime}>0$, there exists a sufficiently large $k_{0}$ such that for $k>k_{0}$, (a) by uniform continuity, $\left|\Delta\left(X_{j}, p, p_{k}\right)\right|<\epsilon$, (b) $\left|j_{\tau_{n}}\left(r_{k}\right)-j_{\tau_{n}}(r)\right|<\epsilon^{\prime}$ by (P2) and (P3). As $n \rightarrow \infty$, we also have (c) $\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{j}, p_{k}\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{E} \rho\left(X, p_{k}\right)^{2}$ almost surely by the Strong Law of Large Numbers. Combining (a)-(c),

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbb{E} \rho\left(X, p_{k}\right)^{2}+j_{\tau_{n}}\left(r_{k}\right)-\left(2 \mathbb{E} \rho\left(X, p_{k}\right)+\epsilon\right) \epsilon-\epsilon^{\prime} \\
& \quad \leq \liminf _{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{j}, p\right)^{2}+j_{\tau_{n}}(r) \leq \limsup _{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{j}, p\right)^{2}+j_{\tau_{n}}(r) \\
& \quad \leq \mathbb{E} \rho\left(X_{j}, p_{k}\right)^{2}+j_{\tau_{n}}\left(r_{k}\right)+\left(2 \mathbb{E} \rho\left(X_{i}, p_{k}\right)+\epsilon\right) \epsilon+\epsilon^{\prime}
\end{aligned}
$$

Sending $\epsilon, \epsilon^{\prime} \rightarrow 0$ and $n \rightarrow \infty$, as $\frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{i}, p\right)^{2}$ and $j_{\tau_{n}}(r)$ are bounded above and below, for any subsequence $p_{k_{s}} \rightarrow p$, we have

$$
\lim _{s \rightarrow \infty} \mathbb{E} \rho\left(X, p_{k_{s}}\right)^{2}+j_{\tau_{n}}\left(r_{k_{s}}\right)=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n} \rho\left(X_{i}, p\right)^{2}+j_{\tau_{n}}(r)
$$

Thus, for all $\omega \in A$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{n}^{\tau_{n}}(p) \rightarrow F(p) \tag{B.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, plugging $p_{k}$ into $p$ and $p$ into $p^{\prime}$ in ( B .4 ,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|F_{n}^{\tau_{n}}\left(p_{n}\right)-F_{n}^{\tau_{n}}(p)\right| \leq & \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(2 \pi\left(X_{i}, p\right)+\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p_{n}, p\right)\right|\right)\left|\Delta\left(X_{i}, p_{n}, p\right)\right| \\
& +\left|\rho_{\tau_{n}}\left(r^{\prime}\right)-\rho_{\tau_{n}}(r)\right| \rightarrow 0
\end{aligned}
$$

by (a) and (b). Thus $\left|F_{n}^{\tau_{n}}\left(p_{n}\right)-F(p)\right| \leq\left|F_{n}^{\tau_{n}}\left(p_{n}\right)-F_{n}(p)\right|+$ $\left|F_{n}^{\tau_{n}}(p)-F(p)\right| \rightarrow 0$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{n}^{\tau_{n}}\left(p_{n}\right) \rightarrow F(p) \tag{B.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all sequences $p_{n} \rightarrow p$ and $\omega \in A$.
Finally, we assert the theorem.

- When $\cap_{n=1}^{\infty} \overline{\cup_{k=n}^{\infty} E_{n}^{\tau}}=\phi$ : trivial
- When $\cap_{n=1}^{\infty} \overline{\bigcup_{k=n}^{\infty} E_{n}^{\tau}} \neq \phi$ : Denote $B_{n}=\cup_{k=n}^{\infty} E_{k}^{\tau}$. Let $\left\{b_{n} \in\right.$ $\left.B_{n}\right\}$ be a sequence such that $b_{n} \rightarrow b \in \cap_{n=1}^{\infty} \overline{B_{n}}$. For each $n$, we can find an index $k_{n}$ such that $b_{n} \in E_{k_{n}}^{\tau}$. We want to show that $b \in E^{\tau}$.

By (B.6), $\ell_{k_{n}}=F_{k_{n}}\left(p_{k_{n}}\right) \rightarrow F(b) \geq \ell$. At the same time, by (B.5), for any arbitrary $q \in \Theta$, there exists a sequence $\epsilon_{n} \rightarrow 0$ such that $F(q) \geq F_{n}(q)-\epsilon_{n} \geq \ell_{n}-\epsilon_{n}$. Then $\inf _{q \in \Theta} F(q)=$ $\ell \geq \limsup \operatorname{sum}_{n \rightarrow \infty} \ell_{n}$ and we conclude $\ell_{n} \rightarrow \ell=F(b)$.

## B.1.6 Proof of Proposition 3.2

We start with deriving series expansion of von Mises-Fisher distribution with respect to spherical harmonics. For convenience, let $p=m+1$, following the conventional notation $S^{p-1}$.

Proposition B.3. The density of von Mises-Fisher distribution on $S^{p-1}$ with the mean direction $\mu$ and the concentration parameter $\kappa$ is given with respect to spherical harmonics as

$$
\begin{aligned}
f_{v M F}\left(x^{T} \mu ; \kappa\right) & =\frac{1}{\omega_{p}} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \sum_{j=1}^{\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{H}_{l}^{p}} c_{l} Y_{l}^{m}(\mu) Y_{l}^{m}(x) \\
& =\frac{1}{\omega_{p}} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{l+\lambda}{\lambda} c_{l} C_{l}^{\lambda}\left(x^{T} \mu\right) \\
& =\frac{1}{\omega_{p}} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} c_{l} \sqrt{\frac{(p-2)_{l}}{l!}} \sqrt{\frac{l+\lambda}{\lambda}} Y_{l}^{0}\left(x^{T} \mu\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\lambda=(p-2) / 2$ and $\omega_{p}=2 \pi^{p / 2} / \Gamma(p / 2)$ the surface area of $S^{p-1}, Y_{l}^{0}(\cos \theta)$ the spherical harmonic function of degree $l$ and order 0 for $0 \leq \theta \leq \pi$, and

$$
c_{l}=\frac{\sqrt{\pi}}{(p-2)_{l} 2^{p-3}} \frac{\Gamma(p+l-2)}{\Gamma((p-1) / 2) \Gamma((p-2) / 2)} \frac{I_{(p-2) / 2+l}(\kappa)}{I_{p / 2-1}(\kappa)} .
$$

Proof. The probability density function of the von Mises-Fisher distribution for the random $p$-dimensional unit vector $x$ is given by

$$
f_{\mathrm{vMF}}\left(x^{T} \mu ; \kappa\right)=C_{p}(\kappa) \exp \left(\kappa \mu^{T} x\right)
$$

with a concentration parameter $\kappa>0$ and a pole $\mu \in S^{p-1}$. The normalization constant $C_{p}(\kappa)$ is given by

$$
C_{p}(\kappa)=\frac{\kappa^{p / 2-1}}{(2 \pi)^{p / 2} I_{p / 2-1}(\kappa)}
$$

where $I_{\nu}$ denotes the modified Bessel function of the first kind at order $\nu$.

By the Funk-Hecke formula (Dai and $\mathrm{Xu}, 2013$ ), we have

$$
\int_{S^{p-1}} f_{\mathrm{vMF}}\left(x^{T} \mu ; \kappa\right) Y_{l}^{m}(x) \mathrm{d} \sigma(x)=c_{l} Y_{l}^{m}(\mu)
$$

where

$$
c_{l}=\frac{\omega_{p-1}}{C_{l}^{(p-2) / 2}(1)} \int_{-1}^{1} f_{\mathrm{vMF}}(t ; \kappa) C_{l}^{(p-2) / 2}(t)\left(1-t^{2}\right)^{\frac{p-3}{2}} \mathrm{~d} t
$$

We express $c_{l}$ with respect to the modified Bessel function

$$
c_{l}=\frac{\sqrt{\pi}}{(p-2)_{l} 2^{p-3}} \frac{\Gamma(p+l-2)}{\Gamma((p-1) / 2) \Gamma((p-2) / 2)} \frac{I_{(p-2) / 2+l}(\kappa)}{I_{p / 2-1}(\kappa)} .
$$

using the following lemma.
Lemma B.1. We have the following formula involving exponential function and Gegenbauer polynomial (Dai and Xu,2013),
$\int_{-1}^{1} e^{\kappa t} C_{l}^{(p-2) / 2}(t)\left(1-t^{2}\right)^{(p-3) / 2} d t=\frac{4 \pi}{2^{p / 2} l!} \frac{\Gamma(p+l-2)}{\Gamma((p-2) / 2)} \kappa^{-(p-2) / 2} I_{(p-2) / 2+l}(\kappa)$.
Proof. For the formula 7.321 in Gradshteyn and Ryzhik (2014, p.805),

$$
\int_{-1}^{1}\left(1-x^{2}\right)^{\nu-1 / 2} e^{i \alpha x} C_{n}^{\nu}(x) \mathrm{d} x=\frac{\pi 2^{1-\nu} i^{n} \Gamma(2 \nu+l)}{l!\Gamma(\nu)} \alpha^{-\nu} J_{\nu+l}(\alpha)
$$

for $\mathfrak{R e} \nu>-1 / 2$, put $\nu=(p-2) / 2$ and $\alpha=-i \kappa$. Here $J_{\nu}$ is the Bessel function of the first kind at order $\nu$. Then, use the identity 9.6.3 in Abramowitz and Stegun (1972, p.375)

$$
e^{ \pm \nu \pi i / 2} I_{\nu}(z)=J_{\nu}\left(z e^{ \pm \pi i / 2}\right)
$$

Then using the addition formula of spherical harmonics, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
f_{\mathrm{vMF}}\left(x^{T} \mu ; \kappa\right) & =\frac{1}{\omega_{p}} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \sum_{j=1}^{\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{H}_{l}^{p}} c_{l} Y_{l}^{m}(\mu) Y_{l}^{m}(x) \\
& =\frac{1}{\omega_{p}} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{l+\lambda}{\lambda} c_{l} C_{l}^{\lambda}\left(x^{T} \mu\right) \\
& =\frac{1}{\omega_{p}} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} c_{l} \sqrt{\frac{(p-2)_{l}}{l!}} \sqrt{\frac{l+\lambda}{\lambda}} Y_{l}^{0}\left(x^{T} \mu\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

with $\lambda=(p-2) / 2$ and $\omega_{p}$, the surface area of $S^{p-1}$.

Remark B.1. In Mardia and Jupp (1999, p.168), the normalizing constant is given as

$$
C_{p}(\kappa)=\left(\frac{\kappa}{2}\right)^{p / 2-1} \frac{1}{\Gamma(p / 2) I_{p / 2-1}(\kappa)} .
$$

Remark B.2. When $p=3$, this result coincides with Jammalamadaka and Terdik (2019) that

$$
f_{v M F}\left(x^{T} \mu ; \kappa\right)=\sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{\sqrt{2 l+1}}{4 \pi} \frac{I_{l+1 / 2}(\kappa)}{I_{1 / 2}(\kappa)} Y_{l}^{0}\left(x^{T} \mu\right) .
$$

The proof of Proposition 3.2 is as follows.

Proof.

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{E} \theta_{v} & =\int_{S^{p-1}} \arccos \left(v^{T} x\right) C_{p}(\kappa) \exp \left(\kappa \mu^{T} x\right) \mathrm{d} \sigma(x) \\
& =\int_{S^{p-1}} \arccos \left(v^{T} x\right) \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\omega_{p}} \frac{l+\lambda}{\lambda} c_{l} \sqrt{\frac{(p-2) l^{\frac{p-2}{2}}}{l!\left(l+\frac{p-2}{2}\right)}} Y_{l}^{0}\left(x^{T} \mu\right) \mathrm{d} \sigma(x) \\
& =\sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\omega_{p}} \frac{l+\lambda}{\lambda} c_{l} \sqrt{\frac{(p-2) l}{l!\left(l+\frac{p-2}{2}\right.}{ }^{\infty}} \int_{S^{p-1}} \arccos \left(v^{T} x\right) Y_{l}^{0}\left(x^{T} \mu\right) \mathrm{d} \sigma(x) \\
& =\sum_{l=0}^{\infty} A(l) Y_{l}^{0}\left(v^{T} \mu\right) \frac{\omega_{p-1}}{C_{l}^{(p-2) / 2}(1)} \int_{-1}^{1} \arccos (t) C_{l}^{(p-2) / 2}(t)\left(1-t^{2}\right)^{(p-3) / 2} \mathrm{~d} t
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
A(l)=\sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{\omega_{p}} \frac{l+\lambda}{\lambda} c_{l} \sqrt{\frac{(p-2)_{l} \frac{p-2}{2}}{l!\left(l+\frac{p-2}{2}\right)}}
$$

Remark B.3. We compute the integral term

$$
\int_{-1}^{1} \arccos (t) C_{l}^{(p-2) / 2}(t)\left(1-t^{2}\right)^{(p-3) / 2} d t
$$

numerically using the following facts.
When $l=0$, as $C_{0}^{(p-2) / 2}=1$, we use the following result.

$$
\int_{-1}^{1} \arccos (t)\left(1-t^{2}\right)^{(p-3) / 2} d t= \begin{cases}\frac{((p-3)!!)^{2}}{(p-2)!}, & p \text { odd } \\ \frac{((p-3)!!)^{2}}{2(p-2)!}, & p \text { even }\end{cases}
$$

When $l>0$, we use the Maclaurin series of arccos on the interval $[-1,1]$,

$$
\arccos t=\frac{\pi}{2}-\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\binom{2 n}{n}}{4^{n}(2 n+1)} t^{2 n+1}, \quad|t| \leq 1
$$

It can be shown from integration by parts that

$$
\int_{-1}^{1} t^{k} C_{l}^{\lambda}(t)\left(1-t^{2}\right)^{\lambda-1 / 2} d t \begin{cases}>0 & \text { if } k \geq l \text { and } k-l \text { is even } \\ =0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

and from the formula 7.311.2 in Gradshteyn and Ryzhik (2014, p.802),

$$
\int_{-1}^{1} t^{l+2 \rho} C_{l}^{\lambda}(t)\left(1-t^{2}\right)^{\lambda-1 / 2} d t=\frac{\Gamma(2 \lambda+l) \Gamma(2 \rho+l+1) \Gamma(\lambda+1 / 2) \Gamma(\rho+1 / 2)}{2^{l} l!\Gamma(2 \lambda) \Gamma(2 \rho+1) \Gamma(l+\lambda+\rho+1)}
$$

## B. 2 Additional Information on Simulation Study

(a) $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}, \kappa=100$
(b) $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=60^{\circ}, \kappa=100$

(c) $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}, \kappa=30$

(d) $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=60^{\circ}, \kappa=30$



Figure B.2.1: Results of radius estimation when $d=2, r=90^{\circ}$ and $n=1000$.

|  |  | Original PNS | $L_{1}$ | $L_{2}$ | MCP | Mean (Oracle) | Median (Oracle) |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $r=45^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}, \kappa=100, n=100$ | mean (sd) | $45.07(1.44)$ | $45.81(1.94)$ | $45.81(1.90)$ | $45.07(1.44)$ | $45.31(0.53)$ | $45.34(0.67)$ |
| $r=45^{\circ}, t_{1}=60^{\circ}, \kappa=100, n=100$ | mean (sd) | $44.25(3.57)$ | $46.96(5.72)$ | $47.16(5.81)$ | $44.25(3.57)$ | $45.33(0.53)$ | $45.39(0.60)$ |
| $r=45^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}, \kappa=30, n=100$ | mean (sd) | $45.49(3.04)$ | $46.89(3.72)$ | $47.08(3.93)$ | $45.49(3.04)$ | $46.01(0.97)$ | $46.11(1.21)$ |
| $r=45^{\circ}, t_{1}=60^{\circ}, \kappa=100, n=1000$ | mean (sd) | $45.26(0.41)$ | $45.49(0.48)$ | $45.49(0.49)$ | $45.26(0.41)$ | $45.30(0.17)$ | $45.30(0.22)$ |

Table B.2.1: Results of radius estimation when $d=2$ and $r=45^{\circ}$.

|  |  | Original PNS | $L_{1}$ | $L_{1}+\mathrm{IoD}$ | MCP | MCP + IoD | Mean (Oracle) | Median (Oracle) |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $r=5^{\circ}, t_{1}=90^{\circ}$ | mean (sd) | $8.06(0.47)$ | $8.15(0.50)$ | $82.73(23.24)$ | $8.06(0.47)$ | $83.46(22.30)$ | $8.43(0.43)$ | $8.01(0.55)$ |
| $\kappa=100, n=100$ | $\widehat{r}=\pi / 2$ | 0 | 0 | $\mathbf{9 1}$ | 0 | $\mathbf{9 2}$ | 0 | 0 |
| $r=90^{\circ}, t_{1}=10^{\circ}$ | mean (sd) | $9.02(0.65)$ | $14.27(19.06)$ | $87.81(11.57)$ | $12.27(15.96)$ | $89.19(8.09)$ | $90.09(0.53)$ | $90.20(0.60)$ |
| $\kappa=100, n=100$ | $\widehat{r}=\pi / 2$ | 0 | 5 | $\mathbf{9 4}$ | 4 | $\mathbf{9 9}$ | 0 | 0 |

Table B.2.2: Results on mitigating type 2 overfitting phenomenon.

서울대학교

## B. 3 Additional Information on Real Data

 Analysis

Figure B.3.1: Cephalometric X-ray Image Data: Data points in the coordinates by PNS (top) and PenPNS (MCP) (bottom). The number means the percent variance explained.


Figure B.3.2: Cephalometric X-ray Image Data : Data points in the coordinates by PNGS (top) and PenPNS (MCP) + IoD Criterion (bottom). The number means the percent variance explained.

Table B.3.1: Results of the Original PNS on Cephalometric X-ray Image Data. SSR stands for 'sum of squared residuals'. Size is a size (radius) of $\mathfrak{A}_{m}$ in $\mathbb{R}^{d+1}$.

| Dimension | SSR | Proportion (\%) | Radius ( ${ }^{\circ}$ ) | Size in $\mathbb{R}^{d+1}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $35 \rightarrow 34$ | $9.28 \mathrm{e}-07$ | 0 | 89.616 | 1 |
| $34 \rightarrow 33$ | $6.438 \mathrm{e}-06$ | 0.02 | 86.7994 | 0.99998 |
| $33 \rightarrow 32$ | $4.248 \mathrm{e}-06$ | 0.04 | 55.9552 | 0.99842 |
| $32 \rightarrow 31$ | $1.3369 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.55 | 15.4737 | 0.82729 |
| $31 \rightarrow 30$ | $8.592 \mathrm{e}-06$ | 0.1 | 89.3343 | 0.22072 |
| $30 \rightarrow 29$ | $1.041 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.11 | 89.3539 | 0.2207 |
| $29 \rightarrow 28$ | $1.3123 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.16 | 87.0537 | 0.22069 |
| $28 \rightarrow 27$ | $1.4962 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.19 | 86.5 | 0.2204 |
| $27 \rightarrow 26$ | $2.7532 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.19 | 85.1729 | 0.21999 |
| $26 \rightarrow 25$ | $2.1458 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.24 | 89.4131 | 0.21921 |
| $25 \rightarrow 24$ | $2.2423 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.27 | 79.8502 | 0.21919 |
| $24 \rightarrow 23$ | $2.4921 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.28 | 83.2425 | 0.21576 |
| $23 \rightarrow 22$ | $2.7892 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.3 | 87.8096 | 0.21426 |
| $22 \rightarrow 21$ | $2.9107 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.33 | 84.726 | 0.21411 |
| $21 \rightarrow 20$ | $3.3793 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.35 | 84.2716 | 0.2132 |
| $20 \rightarrow 19$ | $3.7577 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.37 | 76.3937 | 0.21214 |
| $19 \rightarrow 18$ | $9.0956 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.43 | 83.8254 | 0.20618 |
| $18 \rightarrow 17$ | $5.0163 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.46 | 85.9081 | 0.20499 |
| $17 \rightarrow 16$ | $6.1442 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.57 | 68.0432 | 0.20446 |
| $16 \rightarrow 15$ | $6.0078 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.55 | 80.5524 | 0.18963 |
| $15 \rightarrow 14$ | $6.717 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.58 | 77.1097 | 0.18706 |
| $14 \rightarrow 13$ | $8.2036 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.81 | 61.6184 | 0.18235 |
| $13 \rightarrow 12$ | $9.1071 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.72 | 82.6931 | 0.16043 |
| $12 \rightarrow 11$ | 0.00010021 | 0.83 | 75.1032 | 0.15913 |
| $11 \rightarrow 10$ | 0.000111185 | 1.04 | 65.447 | 0.15378 |
| $10 \rightarrow 9$ | 0.000142635 | 1.04 | 72.4487 | 0.13987 |
| $9 \rightarrow 8$ | 0.000121618 | 1.2 | 71.6694 | 0.13336 |
| $8 \rightarrow 7$ | 0.000188541 | 1.4 | 71.1073 | 0.1266 |
| $7 \rightarrow 6$ | 0.000239954 | 1.46 | 74.0747 | 0.11978 |
| $6 \rightarrow 5$ | 0.000255995 | 1.69 | 79.4723 | 0.11518 |
| $5 \rightarrow 4$ | 0.000332435 | 2.28 | 78.773 | 0.11324 |
| $4 \rightarrow 3$ | 0.000345227 | 2.82 | 73.0055 | 0.11107 |
| $3 \rightarrow 2$ | 0.000461081 | 4.01 | 74.0964 | 0.10622 |
| $2 \rightarrow 1$ | 0.00097963 | 6.13 | 37.3427 | 0.10216 |
| $1 \rightarrow 0$ | 0.009077118 | 68.49 | . | 0.06197 |
| Sum | 0.01315532 | 100 | . | - |

Table B.3.2: Results of PenPNS (MCP) on Cephalometric X-ray Image Data

| Dimension | SSR | Proportion (\%) | Radius ( ${ }^{\circ}$ ) | Size in $\mathbb{R}^{d+1}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $35 \rightarrow 34$ | $9.29 \mathrm{e}-07$ | 0 | 90 | 1 |
| $34 \rightarrow 33$ | 0.000165633 | 0.02 | 90 | 1 |
| $33 \rightarrow 32$ | 0.000407293 | 0.03 | 90 | 1 |
| $32 \rightarrow 31$ | 0.000383708 | 0.07 | 90 | 1 |
| $31 \rightarrow 30$ | 0.000166148 | 0.12 | 90 | 1 |
| $30 \rightarrow 29$ | 0.000118163 | 0.13 | 90 | 1 |
| $29 \rightarrow 28$ | 0.000136102 | 0.19 | 90 | 1 |
| $28 \rightarrow 27$ | 0.000122323 | 0.23 | 90 | 1 |
| $27 \rightarrow 26$ | 0.000126636 | 0.22 | 90 | 1 |
| $26 \rightarrow 25$ | 0.000127404 | 0.28 | 90 | 1 |
| $25 \rightarrow 24$ | 0.000120823 | 0.31 | 90 | 1 |
| $24 \rightarrow 23$ | $9.2 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.33 | 90 | 1 |
| $23 \rightarrow 22$ | $7.9903 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.34 | 90 | 1 |
| $22 \rightarrow 21$ | $5.0067 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.37 | 90 | 1 |
| $21 \rightarrow 20$ | $5.5969 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.39 | 90 | 1 |
| $20 \rightarrow 19$ | $5.45 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.43 | 90 | 1 |
| $19 \rightarrow 18$ | $6.8102 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.49 | 90 | 1 |
| $18 \rightarrow 17$ | $6.9583 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.52 | 90 | 1 |
| $17 \rightarrow 16$ | $7.5542 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.58 | 90 | 1 |
| $16 \rightarrow 15$ | $8.1184 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.61 | 90 | 1 |
| $15 \rightarrow 14$ | $8.0205 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.64 | 90 | 1 |
| $14 \rightarrow 13$ | $9.2151 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.78 | 90 | 1 |
| $13 \rightarrow 12$ | $9.7528 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.8 | 90 | 1 |
| $12 \rightarrow 11$ | 0.000107125 | 0.9 | 90 | 1 |
| $11 \rightarrow 10$ | 0.00011202 | 0.95 | 90 | 1 |
| $10 \rightarrow 9$ | 0.000124998 | 1.07 | 90 | 1 |
| $9 \rightarrow 8$ | 0.000130583 | 1.21 | 90 | 1 |
| $8 \rightarrow 7$ | 0.000213865 | 1.46 | 90 | 1 |
| $7 \rightarrow 6$ | 0.000225034 | 1.67 | 90 | 1 |
| $6 \rightarrow 5$ | 0.000234899 | 1.94 | 90 | 1 |
| $5 \rightarrow 4$ | 0.000307102 | 2.32 | 90 | 1 |
| $4 \rightarrow 3$ | 0.000345819 | 3.32 | 8.8589 | 1 |
| $3 \rightarrow 2$ | 0.000433961 | 4.08 | 90 | 0.154 |
| $2 \rightarrow 1$ | 0.000905904 | 6.7 | 22.2347 | 0.154 |
| $1 \rightarrow 0$ | 0.002882381 | 66.53 | - | 0.05827 |
| Sum | 0.008795588 | 100 | . | . |

Table B.3.3: Results of PNGS on Cephalometric X-ray Image Data

| Dimension | SSR | Proportion (\%) | Radius ( ${ }^{\circ}$ ) | Size in $\mathbb{R}^{d+1}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $35 \rightarrow 34$ | $9.4 \mathrm{e}-08$ | 0 | 90 | 1 |
| $34 \rightarrow 33$ | $2.193 \mathrm{e}-06$ | 0.03 | 90 | 1 |
| $33 \rightarrow 32$ | $5.238 \mathrm{e}-06$ | 0.08 | 90 | 1 |
| $32 \rightarrow 31$ | $2.3826 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.35 | 90 | 1 |
| $31 \rightarrow 30$ | $3.0398 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.45 | 90 | 1 |
| $30 \rightarrow 29$ | $3.2492 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.48 | 90 | 1 |
| $29 \rightarrow 28$ | $3.6514 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.53 | 90 | 1 |
| $28 \rightarrow 27$ | $3.7737 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.55 | 90 | 1 |
| $27 \rightarrow 26$ | $3.6922 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.54 | 90 | 1 |
| $26 \rightarrow 25$ | $4.288 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.63 | 90 | 1 |
| $25 \rightarrow 24$ | $4.4287 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.65 | 90 | 1 |
| $24 \rightarrow 23$ | $4.4848 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.66 | 90 | 1 |
| $23 \rightarrow 22$ | $4.6415 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.68 | 90 | 1 |
| $22 \rightarrow 21$ | $4.8862 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.72 | 90 | 1 |
| $21 \rightarrow 20$ | $5.005 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.73 | 90 | 1 |
| $20 \rightarrow 19$ | $5.2152 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.76 | 90 | 1 |
| $19 \rightarrow 18$ | $5.9216 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.87 | 90 | 1 |
| $18 \rightarrow 17$ | $6.3302 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.93 | 90 | 1 |
| $17 \rightarrow 16$ | $6.7462 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.99 | 90 | 1 |
| $16 \rightarrow 15$ | $7.1574 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 1.05 | 90 | 1 |
| $15 \rightarrow 14$ | $7.4471 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 1.09 | 90 | 1 |
| $14 \rightarrow 13$ | $8.8939 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 1.3 | 90 | 1 |
| $13 \rightarrow 12$ | $9.0918 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 1.33 | 90 | 1 |
| $12 \rightarrow 11$ | 0.000102183 | 1.5 | 90 | 1 |
| $11 \rightarrow 10$ | 0.00010737 | 1.57 | 90 | 1 |
| $10 \rightarrow 9$ | 0.000119884 | 1.76 | 90 | 1 |
| $9 \rightarrow 8$ | 0.000134624 | 1.97 | 90 | 1 |
| $8 \rightarrow 7$ | 0.000161609 | 2.37 | 90 | 1 |
| $7 \rightarrow 6$ | 0.000184337 | 2.7 | 90 | 1 |
| $6 \rightarrow 5$ | 0.000211901 | 3.1 | 90 | 1 |
| $5 \rightarrow 4$ | 0.0002532 | 3.71 | 90 | 1 |
| $4 \rightarrow 3$ | 0.000328375 | 4.81 | 90 | 1 |
| $3 \rightarrow 2$ | 0.000439975 | 6.45 | 90 | 1 |
| $2 \rightarrow 1$ | 0.001041575 | 15.26 | 90 | 1 |
| $1 \rightarrow 0$ | 0.002689564 | 39.41 | . | 1 |
| Sum | 0.006825388 | 100 | . | . |

Table B.3.4: Results of PenPNS (MCP) + IoD Criterion on Cephalometric X-ray Image Data

| Dimension | SSR | Proportion (\%) | Radius ( ${ }^{\circ}$ ) | Size in $\mathbb{R}^{d+1}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $35 \rightarrow 34$ | $9.4 \mathrm{e}-08$ | 0 | 90 | 1 |
| $34 \rightarrow 33$ | $2.192 \mathrm{e}-06$ | 0.03 | 90 | 1 |
| $33 \rightarrow 32$ | $3.349 \mathrm{e}-06$ | 0.05 | 90 | 1 |
| $32 \rightarrow 31$ | $7.641 \mathrm{e}-06$ | 0.12 | 90 | 1 |
| $31 \rightarrow 30$ | $1.252 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.19 | 90 | 1 |
| $30 \rightarrow 29$ | $1.4332 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.22 | 90 | 1 |
| $29 \rightarrow 28$ | $2.0421 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.31 | 90 | 1 |
| $28 \rightarrow 27$ | $2.5036 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.38 | 90 | 1 |
| $27 \rightarrow 26$ | $2.4269 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.37 | 90 | 1 |
| $26 \rightarrow 25$ | $3.0032 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.46 | 90 | 1 |
| $25 \rightarrow 24$ | $3.3803 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.51 | 90 | 1 |
| $24 \rightarrow 23$ | $3.5842 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.54 | 90 | 1 |
| $23 \rightarrow 22$ | $3.7117 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.56 | 90 | 1 |
| $22 \rightarrow 21$ | $4.0047 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.61 | 90 | 1 |
| $21 \rightarrow 20$ | $4.234 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.64 | 90 | 1 |
| $20 \rightarrow 19$ | $4.6403 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.7 | 90 | 1 |
| $19 \rightarrow 18$ | $5.2768 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.8 | 90 | 1 |
| $18 \rightarrow 17$ | $5.6474 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.86 | 90 | 1 |
| $17 \rightarrow 16$ | $6.2659 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 0.95 | 90 | 1 |
| $16 \rightarrow 15$ | $6.593 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 1 | 90 | 1 |
| $15 \rightarrow 14$ | $6.8979 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 1.05 | 90 | 1 |
| $14 \rightarrow 13$ | $8.4216 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 1.28 | 90 | 1 |
| $13 \rightarrow 12$ | $8.6101 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 1.31 | 90 | 1 |
| $12 \rightarrow 11$ | $9.7564 \mathrm{e}-05$ | 1.48 | 90 | 1 |
| $11 \rightarrow 10$ | 0.000102898 | 1.56 | 90 | 1 |
| $10 \rightarrow 9$ | 0.000115491 | 1.75 | 90 | 1 |
| $9 \rightarrow 8$ | 0.000130464 | 1.98 | 90 | 1 |
| $8 \rightarrow 7$ | 0.000157646 | 2.39 | 90 | 1 |
| $7 \rightarrow 6$ | 0.00018072 | 2.74 | 90 | 1 |
| $6 \rightarrow 5$ | 0.000209631 | 3.18 | 90 | 1 |
| $5 \rightarrow 4$ | 0.000250704 | 3.8 | 90 | 1 |
| $4 \rightarrow 3$ | 0.000326408 | 4.95 | 90 | 1 |
| $3 \rightarrow 2$ | 0.00043827 | 6.65 | 90 | 1 |
| $2 \rightarrow 1$ | 0.001040521 | 15.79 | 90 | 1 |
| $1 \rightarrow 0$ | 0.002688727 | 40.79 | . | 1 |
| Sum | 0.006591607 | 100 | . | . |

## Bibliography

Milton Abramowitz and Irene A. Stegun. Handbook of Mathematical Functions with Formulas. Dover Publications, Inc..

Jushan Bai and Serena Ng (2002). Determining the Number of Factors in Approximate Factor Models. Econometrika, 70(1), 191-221.

Yoav Benjamini and Yosef Hochberg (1995). Controlling the False Discovery Rate: A Practical and Powerful Approach to Multiple Testing. Journal of the Royal Statistical Society. Series B, 57(1), 289-300.

Rabi Bhattacharya and Vic Patrangenaru (2003). Large sample theory of intrinsic and extrinsic sample means on manifolds. Annals of Statistics, 31(1), 1-29.
W.M. Boothby (1993). An introduction to Differentiable Manifolds. Academic Press.
A. Björck and G.H. Golub (1973). Numerical methods for computing angles between linear subspaces. Mathematics of Computation, 27(123), 579-594.
G. Bolt and S. Lunag'omez and C. Nemeth (2022). Distances for comparing multisets and sequences. ArXiv:2206.08858v1.

David R. Cox (1966). The Statistical Analysis of Series of Events, 1st ed. Springer.

Feng Dai and Yuan Xu. Approximation Theory and Harmonic Analysis on Spheres and Balls. 1st edition. Springer.

Dietrich, S. and Oleś, M. and Lu, J and Sellner, L and et al. (2018). Drug-perturbation-based stratification of blood cancer. Journal of Clinical Investigation, 128(1), 427-445.
B. Draper and M. Kirvy and J. Marks and T. Marrinan and C. Peterson (2014). A flag representation for finite collections of subspaces of mixed dimensions. Linear Algebra and its Applications, 451, 15-32.

Ian L. Dryden and Kantilal Vardichand Mardia (1993). Statistical Shape Analysis. Wiley.

Ian L. Dryden and Kantilal Vardichand Mardia (2016). Statistical Shape Analysis: With Applications in R. 2nd Ed. Wiley.

Carl Eckart and Gale Young (1936). The approximation of one matrix by another of lower rank. Psychometrika, 1, 211-218.
P. Thomas Fletcher and Conglin Lu and Stephen M. Pizer and Sarang Joshi (2004). Principal geodesic analysis for the study of nonlinear statistics of shape . IEEE Transations on edical Imaging, 23(8), 995-1005.

Qing Feng and Meilei Jiang and J. Hannig and J.S. Marron (2018). Angle-based joint and individual variation explained. Journal of Multivariate Analysis, 241-265.

Ronald Aylmer Fisher (1953). Dispersion on a sphere. Proc. $R$. Soc. Lond. A., 217 (1130), 295-305.
N.I. Fisher (1993). Statistical Analysis of Circular Data. Cambridge University Press.
N.I. Fisher and T. Lewis and B.J.J. Embleton (1993). Statistical Analysis of Spherical Data. Cambridge University Press.

Maurice Fréchet (1948). Les éléments aléatoires de nature quelconque dans un espace distancié. In Annales de l'institut Henri Poincare, 10, 215-310. Presses universitaires de France.

Xing Gao and Sungwon Lee and Sungkyu Jung (2021). Covariatedriven factorization by thresholding for multi-block data. Biometrics, 77(3), 1011-1023.

Irina Gaynanova and Gen Li (2019). Structural learning and integrative decomposition of multi-view data. Biometrics, 75, 1121-1132.
J.C. Gower (1975). Generalized procrustes analysis. Psychometrika, 40, 33-51.

Izrail Solomonovich Gradshteyn and Iosif Moiseevich Ryzhik. Table of Integrals, Series, and Products. 8th edition. Elsevier Inc.

Trevor Hastie. Principal curves and surfaces. PhD Thesis, Stanford University.

Harold Hotelling (1933). Analysis of a complex of statistical variables into principal components. Journal of Educational Psychology, 24, 417-441, 498-520.
S. Huckemann, H. Ziezold (2006). Principal component analysis for Riemannian manifolds with an application to triangular shape spaces,. Adv. Appl. Prob. (SGSA), 38(2), 299-319.
S. Huckemann, T. Hotz, A. Munk (2010). Intrinsic shape analysis: Geodesic principal component analysis for Riemannian manifolds modulo Lie group actions (with discussion). Statist. Sinica, 20(1), 1-100.

Stephan F. Huckemann (2011). Intrinsic inference on the mean geodesic of planar shapes and tree discrimination by leaf growth. The Annals of Statistics, 39(2), 1098-1124.
H. Karcher (1977). Riemannian center of mass and mollifier smoothing. Comm. Pure Appl. Math., XXX, 509-541.

David George Kendall (1984). Shape manifolds, Procrustean metrics, and complex projective spaces. Bull. London Math. Soc., 16, 81-121.

Shoshichi Kobayashi and Katsumi Nomizu. Foundations of Differential Geometry, Vol. II. Wiley, Chichester.
S. Rao Jammalamadaka and György H. Terdik (2019). Harmonic analysis and distribution-free inference for spherical distributions. Journal of Multivariate Analysis, 171, 436-451.

Sungkyu Jung (2012). Analysis of principal nested spheres. Biometrika, 99(3), 551-568.

Sungkyu Jung and Myung Hee Lee and Jeongyoun Ahn (2018). On the number of principal components in high dimensions. Biometrika, 105(2), 389-402.
J.M. Lee (2006). Riemannian Manifolds: An Introduction to Curvature, volume 176. Springer Science \& Business Media.

Kenneth Levenberg (1944). A Method for the Solution of Certain Non-Linear Problems in Least Squares. Quarterly of Applied Mathematics, 2(2), 164-168.

Gen Li and Sungkyu Jung (2017). Incorporating covariates into integrated factor analysis of multi-view data. Biometrics, 72, 1433-1442.

Gen Li and Irina Gaynanova (2018). A general framework for association analysis of heterogeneous data. The Annals of Applied Statistics, 12(3), 1700-1726.
E.F. Lock and K.A. Hoadley and J.S. Marron and A.B. Nobel (2013). Joint and individual variation explained (JIVE) for integrated analysis of multiple data types. Annals of Application Statistics, 7(1), 523-542.

Kanti V. Mardia and Peter E. Jupp (1999). Directional Statistics. 1st ed. John Wiley \& Sons, Inc..

Kanti V. Mardia and Henrik Wiechers and Benjamin Eltzner and Stephan F. Huckemann (2013). Principal component analysis
and clustering on manifolds. Journal of Multivariate Analysis, 188, 104862.

Donald Marquardt (1963). An Algorithm for Least-Squares Estimation of Nonlinear Parameters. SIAM Journal on Applied Mathematics, 11(2), 431-441.

Mshaik, R. and Simonet, J. and Georgievski, A. and et al. (2021). HSP90 inhibitor NVP-BEP800 affects stability of SRC kinases and growth of T-cell and B-cell acute lymphoblastic leukemias. Blood Cancer Journal, 11(61), doi:10.1038/s41408-021-004502, url:https://www.nature.com/articles/s41408-021-00450-2.

Jeremy L. Norris and Melissa A. Farrow and Danielle B. Gutierrez et al. (2017). Integrated, High-Throughput, Multiomics Platform Enables Data-Driven Construction of Cellular Responses and Reveals Global Drug Mechanisms of Action. Journal of Proteome Research, 16(3), 1364-1375.

Damien Passemier and Jian-Feng Yao (2014). Estimation of the number of spikes, possibly equal, in the high-dimensional case. Journal of Multivariate Analysis, 127, 173-183.

Feng Qi (2010). Bounds for the Ratio of Two Gamma Functions. Journal of Inequalities and Applications, 493058. https://doi.org/10.1155/2010/493058

Jason A. Reuter and Damek Spacek and Michael P. Snyder (2015). High-Throughput Sequencing Technologies. Molecular Cell, 58(4), doi:10.1016/j.molcel.2015.05.004.
R. Tyrrell Rockafellar and Roger J. B. Wets. Variational Analysis. 1st ed. Springer.

Johannes O. Royset (2018). Approximations and solution estimates in optimization. Mathematical Programming: Series $A$ and $B, \mathbf{1 7 0 ( 2 ) , ~ 4 7 9 - 5 0 6 . ~}$

Christof Schotz (2022). Strong laws of large numbers for generalizations of Frechet mean sets. A Journal of Theoretical and Applied Statistics, 56(1), 34-52.

Age K. Smilde and Johan A. Westerhuis and Sijmen de Jong (2003). A framework for sequential multiblock component methods. Journal of Chemometrics, 17, 323-337.
I. Subramanian and S. Verma and S. Kumar and A. Jere and K. Anamika (2020). Multi-omics Data Integration, Interpretation, and Its Application. Bioinformatics and Biology Insights, doi:10.1177/1177932219899051, url:https://journals.sagepub.com/doi/full/10.1177/1177932219899051.

Katrijn VanDeun and Age K Smilde and Mariet J van der Werf and Henk AL Kiers and Iven VanMechelen (2009). A structured overview of simultaneous component based data integration. BMC Bioinformatics, 10, 246.

Chunxin Wang and Richard J. Youle (2014). The Role of Mitochondria in Apoptosis. Annu Rev Genet., 43, 95-118.

Ching-Wei Wang and Cheng-Ta Huang and Jia-Hong Lee and Chung-Hsing Li and Sheng-Wei Chang and Ming-Jhih Siao and

Tat-Ming Lai and Bulat Ibragimov and Tomaž Vrtovec and Olaf Ronneberger and Philipp Fischer and Tim F. Cootes and Claudia Lindner (2016). A benchmark for comparison of dental radiography analysis algorithms. Medical Image Analysis, 31, 63-76.

Ke Ye and Lek-Heng Lim (2016). Schubert varieties and distances between subspaces of different dimensions. SIAM Journal of Matrix Analysis and Applications, 37(3), 1176-1197.

Cun-Hui Zhang (2010). Nearly unbiased varialbe selection under minimax concave penalty. The Annals of Statistics, 38(2), 894942.

Youwei Zhang and Tony Hunter (2014). Roles of Chk1 in Cell Biology and Cancer Therapy. International Journal of Cancer, 134(5), 1013-1023.

Herbert Ziezold (1977). On Expected Figures and a Strong Law of Large Numbers for Random Elements in Quasi-Metric Spaces. Transaction of the 7th Prague Conference on Information Theory, Statistical Decision Function and Random Processes A, 591-602.

## 국문초록

본 학위논문에서는 비유클리드 공간에서의 차원축소법에 대해 다룬 다. 비유클리드 공간에선 곡률로 인해 피타고라스 정리와 같은 유 클리드 공간에서 널리 사용되는 방법론을 활용하기 힘들다. 자료의 구조를 파악하기 위해 주어진 비유클리드 공간의 기하학적 성질을 이해하는 것이 중요하다. 이 논문에서는 주성분분석이나 인자분석과 같이 널리 사용되는 다변량 자료분석을 비유클리드 공간에 일반화하 고자 다음 두 방법론을 제안한다.

제 2장에서는 다중 근원 자료를 분석하고자 Principal Structure Identification (PSI) 방법론을 제안한다.

다중 근원 자료는 같은 관찰 대상으로부터 여러 변수 집단에 대해 채취된 자료이다. 요즘 각광받는 다중 오믹스 자료가 좋은 예이다. 다중 근원 자료를 통합적인 관점에서 분석하기 위해, 장료들 사이의 공통 스코어가 있는지 확인하도록 한다. 이때 공통 스코어는 모든 자료 집단들이 공유하는 것일수도, 일부 자료집단들이 공유하는 것 일수도, 혹은 하나의 자료집단에만 귀속되는 것일수도 있다.

우리 방법론이 가지는 가장 큰 특징 중 하나는, 각 자료가 가지는 인자 스코어 선형부공간을 자료 간 연관관계를 밝히는 기하학적 기 본 요소로 사용하는 것이다. 공통 스코어 선형부공간을 알아내는데 있어 잡음으로부터 생기는 부정확함을 회피하고자, 자료집단의 인자

스코어 선형부공간의 1 차원 깃발 공간을 계산한다. 이 1 차원 깃발 공간과 근접한 선형부공간들을 골라내어 스코어를 공유하는 자료집 단을 묶어주는 절차적 알고리즘을 제안한다.

제 3 장에서는 초구면체 위의 자료를 분석하는 Penalized Principal Nested Spheres (PenPNS) 방법론을 제안한다.

Analysis of Principal Nested Spheres (Jung, 2012)는 초구면체 위의 자료를 분석하는 차원축소 방법론이다. PNS에서는 차원축소가 절차적 과정을 통해 이루어지며, 불필요한 차원이 하나씩 축소된다. 특히 작은 구로 자료를 가늠하여 비측지선 추정을 가능케한 것이 장점이다.

하지만 PNS에게는 과적합이란 단점이 있다. 과적합이란 큰 구를 따라 생성된 데이터가 지나치게 작은 구로 추정되는 현상을 말한다. 우리는 두 종류의 과적합을 다룬다. (1) 모수로서 반지름은 0에서 $\pi / 2$ 까지의 범위를 가지게 되므로, 추정된 반지름이 $\pi / 2$ 보다 큰 경우 추정된 축은 구면의 반대편의 것으로 대체되며 반지름 추정도 그에 따른다. 따라서, 추정된 반지름의 분포는 실제 축과 점들 사이의 각도 의 분포가 반으로 접힌 모양을 가지게 된다. 이와 같은 이유로 반지름 추정의 값은 $\pi / 2$ 보다 작을 수 밖에 없다. (2) 만약 자료가 큰 구를 따 라 생성되었지만 매우 짧은 구간에서 생성되는 경우, 자료점 구름의 모양은 접시 모양과 가까워지게 된다. 이 경우 접시 모양 구름 안에 들어있는 반지름이 아주 작은 작은 구로 자료가 추정된다.

PenPNS는 과적합 현상을 교정하는 PNS의 개량형이다. 첫번째 과적합 현상을 교정하기 위해, PenPNS는 추정 과정에서 반지름을 정규화한다. 이때 반지름이 $\pi / 2$ 보다 작아질수록 벌점화 항목의 값이 커진다. 두번째 과적합 현상을 교정하기 위해, PenPNS는 교차 검증 오차에 벌점화 항목을 반영한다. 이 벌점화 항목은 퍼짐지표에서 유 래하는데, 퍼짐지표는 접시모양 데이터 구름이 작은 반지름의 구로

추정되는 상황에서 그 값이 커진다. 이와 같은 과적합 해결 방법의 효과를 모의실험과 실제 데이터 분석을 통해 보이겠다.
주요어 : 차원축소, 비유클리드 공간, 다중 근원 자료, 초구면체 위 자료, 멀티 오믹스 자료.

학 번: 2017-38449

